

Ital



C. H. Grandgent

458.2421 GRA

Grandgent, C. H.  
(Charles Hall),  
Italian grammar,

[c1915]

**SANTA CRUZ PUBLIC LIBRARY**  
**SANTA CRUZ, CALIFORNIA 95060**



0000116324658

Heath &amp; Johnston Language Series

CEN

## ITALIAN GRAMMAR

By

C. H. GRANDGENT

*Harvard University*

and

E. H. WILKINS

*Oberlin College**Revised Edition*

D. C. HEATH AND COMPANY

BOSTON

NEW YORK

CHICAGO

LONDON

ATLANTA

DALLAS

SAN FRANCISCO

**COPYRIGHT, 1887 AND 1904**  
**By C. H. GRANDGENT**

**COPYRIGHT, 1915**  
**By D. C. HEATH & CO.**

**3:1**

**Printed in U. S. A.**

## PREFACE

THIS volume is the result of an attempt to put into convenient form and the smallest possible compass all the grammar needed by ordinary students of Italian. Short as the book is, it contains some paragraphs which beginners will probably skip: the longer lists of words and endings and a great part of the chapters on suffixes and irregular verbs will be useful mainly for reference. While endeavoring to make my work represent primarily the language as it is spoken and written at the present day, I have tried to give also as many obsolete forms as readers of the poets will require.

It has been my aim throughout to make the rules clear for all classes of pupils, even for those ignorant of other foreign languages, provided they understand the technical words commonly used in grammars. With this object in view, I have ascribed to the Italian vowels the pronunciation of the English ones that are nearest to them; an accurate description of the Italian sounds would, I fear, prove confusing to beginners who have had no training in phonetics. It will be easy for the instructor to explain not only the vowels, but some of the consonants, and the division of words into syllables, much better than can be done in a book like this.

The authorities I have consulted most are the dictionaries of Fanfani, Rigutini and Fanfani, Fornari (*Nuovo Bazzarini*), and Tommasco and Bellini. I have made but little use of other grammars; I am, however, indebted to Toscani for some ideas and a few of my examples. The chapters on



syntax, and the treatment of irregular verbs, pronouns, suffixes, and the plural of words in *-co* and *-go* are almost entirely the result of original work.

In conclusion, I wish to express my gratitude to Professor Nash, of Harvard, to my friend and teacher, Cav. Filippo Orlando, of Florence, and to the gentlemen who assisted me in correcting the proof-sheets; and I wish above all to thank Professor Sheldon, of Harvard, and Professor Bendelari, of Yale, without whose aid and encouragement I should scarcely have ventured to offer this book to the public.

CAMBRIDGE, September, 1887.

#### NOTE TO THE REVISED EDITION

So thoroughly has the old Grammar been overhauled by Professor Wilkins and me that it now presents itself almost as a new book. The original Italian texts and bits of English prose for translation have disappeared; and in place of the set of Lessons and Exercises added to the book in 1904, Professor Wilkins has furnished a fresh series, better and more abundant than the matter it supplants. A careful revision of the rules and examples has resulted in some improvement of the former and many additions to the latter. Use has been made of the system of grammatical nomenclature recently recommended by the American committee entrusted with the study of that subject. Not least among the advantages of this edition is the marked gain in typographical clearness.

CAMBRIDGE, March, 1915.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
PRONUNCIATION . . . . .	1
Sounds, Spelling, Accent, Syllabication, 1. — Additional Notes. 6. — Inflections of the Voice, 9.	
ARTICLES . . . . .	11
The Definite Article, 11. — The Indefinite Article, 14.	
NOUNS. . . . .	15
Gender, 15. — Number, 17.	
ADJECTIVES . . . . .	20
Gender and Number, 20. — Comparison, 22.	
AUGMENTATIVES; DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS . . . . .	24
Augmentatives and Diminutives, 24. — Numerals, 26.	
DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS . . . . .	29
PERSONAL PRONOUNS . . . . .	35
Conjunctive Forms, 35. — Disjunctive Forms, 40. — Forms of Address, 43.	
AUXILIARY VERBS . . . . .	45
Auxiliaries of Voice and Tense ( <i>essere, avere</i> ), 45. — Modal Auxiliaries, 51.	
REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS. . . . .	52
The Regular Verb, 53. — The Irregular Verb, 57.	
MOODS AND TENSES . . . . .	61
Infinitive and Participle, 61. — Past, Present, and Future, 63. — Past Future or Conditional, 65. — Subjunctive, 65.	
CONJUNCTIONS; PREPOSITIONS; ADVERBS . . . . .	68
Conjunctions, 68. — Prepositions, 70. — Adverbs, 73.	
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS . . . . .	70
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS . . . . .	80
First Conjugation, 81. — Second Conjugation, 82. — Third Conjugation, 85. — Fourth Conjugation, 90.	

	PAGE
ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS . .	92
LESSONS AND EXERCISES . . . . .	97
ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY . . . . .	155
ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY . . . . .	177
INDEX . . . . .	181



# ITALIAN GRAMMAR

## PRONUNCIATION

1. The Italian alphabet has the same letters as the English, except that *k*, *w*, *x*, and *y* do not occur in native words in modern Italian.

2. The Italians distinguish seven vowels: *a*, close *e*, open *e*, *i*, close *o*, open *o*, *u*; to these may be added an intermediate *e* and *o*, used in unaccented syllables. Every vowel has a clear sound, no matter what may be its position in the word. It is never obscured; and it never tends, as do the English long vowels, to become a diphthong.

Italian vowels are all pronounced rather quickly; hence there is but little difference in quantity between accented and unaccented sounds. English-speaking students must carefully avoid drawling the accented and slighting the unaccented syllables; they should try to give to every Italian vowel about the length of *i* in 'bitter.'

*a* is nearly like *a* in 'father': as *fava*, *canna*, *cassa*, *palla*.

*e* close is nearly like *a* in 'fate': as *beve*, *vere*, *stelle*, *messe*.

*e* open may be formed by trying to pronounce *e* in 'bell' with the mouth very wide open: as *bella*, *amena*, *fera*, *pensa*.

*i* is nearly like *ee* in 'feet': as *miri*, *vini*, *fissi*, *spilli*.

*o* close is nearly like *o* in 'mope': as *dopo*, *dove*, *bollo*, *sotto*.

*o* open is nearly like *aw* in 'saw' pronounced with the mouth wide open: as *no*, *odi*, *poi*, *donna*.

*u* is nearly like *oo* in 'boot': as *una*, *cura*, *nulla*, *ruppi*.

(*a*) The letters *i* and *u* are sometimes used to represent consonant sounds (see 4); but in formulating rules they are always counted as vowels.

3. As close and open vowels are not distinguished in spelling, some rules are necessary:

1. Unaccented *e* and *o* are intermediate between close and open: as *mare, sea; amo, I love.*

2. *e* and *o* are close in all monosyllables<sup>1</sup> ending in a consonant: as *con, with; non, not; per, for.*

3. In monosyllables<sup>1</sup> and oxytones<sup>2</sup> ending in a vowel, final *e* is close, final *o* is open: as *che, what; me, me; re, king; credè, he believed; perchè, why; do, I give; Po, Po; sarò, I shall be; andò, he went.*

EXCEPTIONS: (a) Final *e* is open in *è=is, re=re*, interjections (as *aimè, alas; chè, nonsense*), proper names (as *Noè, Noah*), and foreign words (as *caffè, coffee*). (b) Final *o* is close in *lo* and *o*.

4. Accented *e* and *o* are always open in the groups *ie* and *uo*: as *piede, foot; fuoco, fire.* *e* and *o* standing for *ie* and *uo* are open: as *ven=viene, he comes; cor=cuore, heart.*

5. In words that have always formed a part of the spoken language, accented *e* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ē* or *ĭ*, open when it represents Latin *ě* or *ae*; accented *o* is nearly always close when it represents Latin *ō* or *ŭ*, open when it represents Latin *ǒ* or *au*. In book words accented *e* and *o* are usually open.

In all cases not covered by the first three rules, the quality of *e* and *o* will be marked in this book, an acute accent (') denoting the close, a circumflex (^) the open sound: as *avére, to have; méno, less; tiène, he holds; liêto, happy; poêta, poet; ôra, hour; mólto, much; buôno, good; pôco, little; môto, motion.*

4. *B, f, m, p, q, v* are pronounced as in English.

*c*, before *e* or *i*, sounds like *ch* in 'chin'; elsewhere it is always like English *k*: as *cima, top; cóme, how; dólce, sweet.*

<sup>1</sup> Not including shortened forms of words that regularly have more than one syllable.

<sup>2</sup> Words accented on the last syllable.

**g**, before **e** or **i**, sounds like *g* in 'gem'; elsewhere it is always like *g* in 'go': as *gatto*, *cat*; *gênte*, *people*; *spingi*, *push*.

(a) A **cc** or a **gg** before **e** or **i** has merely the sound of *ch* in 'chin' or *g* in 'gem' prolonged: as *facce*, *faces*; *légge*, *law*.

**d**, **l**, **n**, **t** are pronounced further forward in the mouth than in English; the tip of the tongue should touch the back of the upper front teeth: as *alto*, *high*; *dato*, *given*; *luna*, *moon*; *nudo*, *naked*; *tuôno*, *thunder*.

**h** is always silent: as *ahi*, *oh!* *ha*, *he has*.

**i**, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *y*: as *iêri*, *yesterday*; *paio*, *pair*; *più*, *more*. In the groups *cia*, *cio*, *ciu*, *gia*, *gio*, *giu*, an unaccented **i** serves only to show that the **c** or **g** is soft: as *faccia*, *face*; *guancia*, *cheek*; *ciò*, *that*; *giù*, *down*; *mangia*, *eat*; *raggio*, *ray*.

**j** is merely another way of writing **i**.

**n** before a **q** or a hard **c** or **g** has the sound of English *ng*: as *banca* (*bang-ka*), *bank*; *dunque* (*dung-kwe*), *therefore*; *lungo* (*lung-go*), *long*.

**r** is always rolled, the point of the tongue vibrating against the teeth: as *caro*, *dear*; *rósso*, *red*; *per*, *for*. When **r** is double or followed by a consonant, the trill is prolonged: as *carro*, *cart*; *burro*, *butter*; *marrône*, *chestnut*; *carne*, *meat*; *pôrta*, *door*.

**s** is generally pronounced nearly like English *s* in 'see,' but with a somewhat sharper sound: as *sô*, *I know*; *spillo*, *pin*.

Initial **s** before a sonant (**b**, **d**, **g**, **l**, **m**, **n**, **r**, **v**) has a sound intermediate between **s** and English *z*: as *sdruc-ciolare*, *to slip*; *slitta*, *sleigh*.

A single **s** between vowels has, in most words, the sound of English *z*: as *caso*, *case*; *cáusa*, *cause*; *viso*, *face*. But in the following cases it is pronounced like *s* in 'see,' 'mason':

(a) In *annusare*, *ásino*, *casa*, *Chiusi*, *côsa*, *così*, *desidêrio*, *naso*, *parasito*, *péso*, *Pisa*, *pisêllo*, *pôsa*, *ripôso*, *riso*, *susina*, and their derivatives, and in some uncommon words.



(b) After the prefixes *de-*, *di-*,<sup>1</sup> *pre-*, *pro-*, *re-*, *ri-*, *tra-*<sup>1</sup>: as *desistere*, *diségno*, *presumere*, *proseguire*, *reservare*, *risolvere*, *trasudare*.

(c) In the adjective ending *-oso* and the adjective and substantive ending *-ese*: as *noioso*, *troublesome*; *inglese*, *English*; *mese*, *month*. But in *cortese*, *francese*, *lucchese*, *marchese*, *paese*, *palése*, the *s* is like English *z*.

(d) In the past absolute and past participle of *chiêdere*, *chiûdere*, *nascôndere*, *pôrre*, *râdere*, *ridere*, *rimanêre*, *rispôndere*, *rôdere*, and all verbs in *-êndere*; and in their compounds and derivatives: as *chiêsi*, *socchiuso*, *nascôse*, *rispôsero*, *rasóio*, *rimase*, *corrispósi*, *rósero*, *accési*, *réso*, *scésa*.

EXCEPTIONS to this rule are *deridere*, verbs in *-clûdere*, and derivatives of *rôdere*.

*u*, unaccented, before a vowel, sounds like English *w*: as *buôno*, *good*; *guardare*, *to look*; *può*, *he can*.

*z* and *zz* are generally pronounced like a long and vigorous *ts*: as *alzare*, *to lift*; *azióne*, *action*; *prêzzo*, *price*; *zîo*, *uncle*.

In the following cases, however, *z* and *zz* sound like a prolonged *dz*:

(a) In *azzurro*, *dozzina*, *mêzzo*, *pranzo*, *ribrézzo*, *romanzo*, *zêlo*, and many less common words.

(b) In verbs in *-izzare* (as *utilizzare*, *to utilize*); except *attizzare*, *dirizzare*, *guizzare*, *rizzare*, *stizzare*, and their compounds, and a few uncommon words.

## 5. The following combinations are to be noted:

**ch** (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *k*: as *fichi* (plural of *fico*, *fig*). **sch** is like *sk*: as *schérzo*, *sport*.

**gh** (used only before *e* and *i*) is always like English *g* in 'go': as *aghi* (plural of *ago*, *needle*).

<sup>1</sup> Not to be confounded with *dis-*, *tras-*: *disonóre*, *trasandare*.



gli (written *gl* if the following vowel be *i*) is nearly like English *lli* in 'million': as *figlio, son; figli, sons*.

But in *Anglia, geroglifico, glicerina, neglìgere* and its derivatives, and a few uncommon words borrowed from the Greek or Latin, *gl* is like English *gl*.

gn is nearly like *ni* in 'onion': as *ogni, every*.

qu is always like *kw*: as *quésto, this*.

sc before *e* and *i* is nearly like *sh* in 'ship': as *uscire, to go out*.

Before all other letters it is pronounced *sk*: as *scuôla, school; schérno, contempt*.

6. Every letter in Italian is distinctly and separately sounded; the only exceptions are *h*, silent *i* (sec 4), and the combinations mentioned in 5.

*arte, art.*

*firma, signature.*

*furto, theft.*

*giórno, day.*

*vêrso, toward.*

*andâi, I went.*

*âura, breeze.*

*bugie, lies.*

*Eurôpa, Europe.*

*miêi, my.*

*paúra, fear.*

*sentîi, I felt.*

*nói, we.*

*pôi, then.*

*suôi, his.*

Where a double consonant is written, both letters must be sounded, the first at the end of the preceding, the second at the beginning of the following syllable:

*anno, year.*

*méssô, put.*

*babbo, father.*

*quéllo, that.*

*fatto, done.*

*bócca, mouth.*

For *rr, zz*, and soft *cc* and *gg*, see 4.

*l, m, n*, and *r*, when preceded by an accented vowel and followed by another consonant, are prolonged:

*alto (all-to), high.*

*sêmpre (sêmm-pre), always.*

*tanto (tann-to), so much.*

*parte (parr-to), part.*

7. The accent is nearly always the same as in Latin. In this book it will always be noted. Of the signs written here, students need use only the grave (`), which is placed on the last syllable of oxytones and on some monosyllables; Italian writers do not agree as to the use of the other marks; many now use the acute, and not the grave, on final *e*.

8. Italian words are divided in such a way that, if possible, every syllable shall begin with a consonant:

ta-vo-lí-no, <i>table.</i>	mêz-zo, <i>half.</i>
frat-tán-to, <i>meanwhile.</i>	các-cia, <i>hunt.</i>
al-l' uô-mo, <i>to the man.</i>	ôg-gi, <i>to-day.</i>
nar-rá-re, <i>to relate.</i>	po-ê-ta, <i>poet.</i>

In the groups s+consonant, consonant+r, those mentioned in 5, and ci, fi, gi, pi, both consonants belong to the following syllable. i=y and u=w go with the following vowel; ái, áu, ei, eu, oi are not separated.

fê-sta	ca-stí-ghi	ri-flêt-te-re
te-á-tro	del-l' ác-qua	miêi
a-vrò	in-chiô-stro	al-l' áu-ra
bi-só-gno	mi-glió-re	tuôì

### ADDITIONAL NOTES ON PRONUNCIATION

[The numbers prefixed to the following notes refer to the paragraphs of the foregoing chapter.]

1. The Tuscan names of the letters are:

a	é	i	énne	erre	vu or vi
bi	êffe	jé or i lúngo	ô	esse	zêta (with z pronounced dz)
ci	gi	êlle	pi	ti	
di	ácca	êmme	cu	u	

They do not change in the plural. Their gender is not fixed; in general those ending in -a or -e are considered as feminine, the others as masculine. K, x, y are *cáppa*, *íccase*, *ípsilon*, all masculine.

2. (a) The sounds á, ê, ô, followed by a single consonant, are somewhat longer than the other vowels: for instance, in *dáto*, *fêro*, *ôvo* the accented a, e, o are longer than in *dáttero*, *vêro*, *ôvc*. Final accented vowels sound particularly short: as in *amò*, *beltà*, *caffè*.

(b) In forming i the mouth should be made as broad as possible from side to side. For u and ô the lips should be puckered. For a and ê the mouth should be opened very wide.

3. (a) If an adverb in **-mênte** is formed from an adjective containing **ê** or **ô**, this vowel has, in the adverb, a secondary accent, and retains its open sound: as (*brêve*) *brêvemênte*, *briefly*; (*nôbile*) *nôbilmênte*, *nobly*. Furthermore, **ê** and **ô** retain their quality in seeming compounds that consist, in reality, of two or more separate words: as *tostochê* = *tôstoché* = *tôsto che*, *as soon as*.

(b) Past absolute forms and past participles in **-esi**, **-eso**, **-osi**, **-oso** have a close **e** or **o**; except *chiêsi* (also *chiêsi*), *esplôsi*, *esplôso*, *lêso*.

(c) In the suffixes **-eccio** (**-a**), **-esco** (**-a**), **-ese**, **-essa**, **-etto** (**-a**), **-ezzo** (**-a**), **-mente**, and **-mento** the **e** is always close; while in the diminutive suffix **-ello** (**-a**), and in the endings **-ente**, **-enza**, **-erio** (or **-ero**), and **-esimo** (**-a**) it is open: as *inglêsc*, *English*; *probabilmênte*, *probably*; *prudênte*, *prudent*; *ventêsim*, *twentieth*.

(d) In the endings **-oio**, **-one**, **-ore**, and in the suffix **-oso** (**-a**) the **o** is close; while in the ending **-orio**, and in **-occio** (**-a**), **-otto** (**-a**), and **-ozzo** (**-a**), used as suffixes to nouns or adjectives, it is open: as *vassôio*, *tray*; *amôre*, *love*; *romitôrio*, *hermitage*; *casôtta*, *good-sized house*.

(e) In the following cases accented **e** or **o** may have either the close or the open sound: in *Giorgio*, *maestra*, *maestro*, *nego* (from *negâre*), *neve*, *organo*, *scendere*, *senza*, *siete* and *sono* (from *êssere*), *spegnere*, *Stefano*, *vendere*; and in the past future endings **-esti**, **-emmo**, **-este**. The present subjunctive forms *dîeno*, *sîeno*, *stîeno* are pronounced also *diêno*, *siêno*, *stiêno*.

(f) In poetry we often find **ê** for **iê**, **ô** for **uô**: as *vên* = *viêne*, *he comes*; *côr* = *cuôre*, *heart*. Simple **ô** for **uô** is very common in modern spoken Tuscan: as *bôno* = *buôno*, *good*; *nôvo* = *nuôvo*, *new*.

4. c. (a) Between two vowels, of which the second is **e** or **i**, single **c** and single **g** are, in ordinary Tuscan speech, pronounced respectively like *sh* in 'ship' and *si* in 'vision': as *pâce*, *peace*; *stagión*, *season*.

(b) Between two vowels, of which the second is **a**, **o**, or **u**, a single **c** or a **q** is, in popular Tuscan speech, sounded nearly like English *h*: as *poco* (*pôho*), *little*; *di questa cosa* (*di hwésta hôsa*), *of this thing*. This pronunciation is regarded as inelegant.

j. Some writers use j, except after a consonant, for the i that is pronounced y: as jeri for iêri, *yesterday*; pajo for páio, *pair*. It is sometimes used also for final i in the plural of words in unaccented -io: as specchj (also specchî and occasionally specchii) for spêcchi, *mirrors*, plural of spêcchio.

z. Aside from verbs in -izzàre, z and zz have the value dz in the following words and their derivatives:

arzillo	frizzo	magazzino	românzo	zêlo
azzúrro	garzône	mânzo	ronzfo	zenft
barzellétta	gazzèlla	mêzzo	rôzzo	zêro
bizza	gazzétta	orizzônte	zaffiro	zêta
brézza	gônzo	ôrzo	zaffrône	zínco
brônzo	Lázzaro	pênzolo	zanzára	zodiáco
donzèlla	lazzaréto	prânzo	zêbra	zôlla
dozzina	lâzzo	ribrézzo	zêffiro	zôna

also in all derivatives of the Greek *zoos*, and in many uncommon words.

5. In pronouncing gli and gn the point of the tongue should remain behind the lower teeth: as figlio, *son*; ógni, *every*.

6. If one of the words mentioned below, or any oxytone ending in a vowel, is closely followed by a word beginning with a consonant, this consonant is, in Tuscany, generally pronounced double. The words are:<sup>1</sup>

a	dì, <i>day</i>	giù	o <sup>4</sup>	sópra
che	di', <i>say</i>	ha	più	sta <sup>2</sup>
chi	e	ho	qua	sto
ciò	è	infra	quálche	su
cóme	fa <sup>2</sup>	intra	qui	te <sup>3</sup>
cóntra	fè, <i>faith</i>	là	re	tra
da	fe'-féce	lì	sa	tre
dà, <i>gives</i>	fo	ma	se, <i>if</i>	tu
da', <i>give</i>	fra	me <sup>3</sup>	sè	va <sup>3</sup>
do	fu	mo'=môdo	si	vo-vádo
dóve	già	nè	so	vo'-vôglio

<sup>1</sup> The materials for this list were taken from D'Ovidio's article in Gröber's *Grundriß der romanischen Philologie*, I, p. 496 (2d ed., p. 644).

<sup>2</sup> Both the imperative sing. and the pres. ind. third sing.

<sup>3</sup> The disjunctive form.

<sup>4</sup> Both the conjunction *or* and the interrogative particle.



verrà da me dománi (verráddamméddománi), *he will come to my house to-morrow*. In such cases *c* is, of course, never pronounced like *h* (see 4, *c*, (b)).

## INFLECTIONS OF THE VOICE

1. Italian speech is at once smoother and less monotonous than American: it is less interrupted by breathings, and it has far greater variations of pitch. In order to speak or read Italian well, an American must learn to breathe in speaking as he does in singing; he must inhale deeply at the beginning of the clause, and not stop again until he reaches the end of it. The following directions may be of use; they are based on the Tuscan pronunciation, and particularly on that of Siena.

2. (a) The simplest inflection in a declarative sentence is as follows: at the beginning the voice is pitched low; it rises in the middle (in earnest conversation often to a falsetto), and falls again at the end. The most emphatic word generally receives the highest tone; if there are no words after it to complete the cadence, the first words of the phrase are often repeated at the end: as *me lo dicono tútti me lo dicono*, *they all tell me so*, where the *u* of *tútti* is an octave higher than the beginning and the close of the sentence.

(b) When there is a pause on some not particularly emphatic word before the main verb, that word has a slight circumflex accent, the voice rising about one semitone and falling about three: as *fuòri di città ^ c' è úna bellíssima vîlla \*, *outside the city there's a beautiful villa*, where *bellíssima* has the high pitch, and the *a* of *città* has the circumflex. This accent is generally heard whenever modifying clauses or phrases precede the main clause.

(c) Almost all declarative sentences are made up chiefly of these two inflections, the long rise and fall and the short circumflex. Americans must avoid breaking up their sentences by meaningless falling tones. The fall occurs in Italian, as in English, on a very emphatic word, and at the end of a sentence. It is used, also, with a verb of saying or thinking, followed by a direct quotation;

and with any word or phrase used as a vocative, except in loud calling (see 4, b): as *allóra chiáma Alfrédo e gli díce\*: *Bambíno\, dímmi la verità\*, where the syllables *fre*, *bam*, and *dim* have the highest pitch.

3. (a) Questions to which the answer may be 'yes' or 'no' have either one of two circumflex accents: in the first the voice rises about five semitones and falls one; in the second, which is sometimes used in reading and in polite phrases, the voice rises and falls about an octave. Ex.: *l'hái vísto?* *have you seen him?* where the pitches of *l'hái*, *vi*, and *sto* may be represented by the notes *do*, *fa*, *mi*; *ha bèn dormíto?* *did you sleep well?* where *mi* is an octave higher than *dor* and *to*. The former accent may be heard in the Irish pronunciation of English.

(b) These inflections are nearly always confined to the last few syllables of the sentence. In some questions, however, they appear twice, generally occurring first on the verb; and occasionally the circumflex on the verb is the only one.

(c) Questions that cannot be answered by 'yes' or 'no' usually begin high, the pitch depending on the emphasis. The voice then falls, but generally rises again at the last syllable, going up about three semitones: as *o cóme\ hái fáttö/?* *how did you do it?* This accent is common among the Irish, and may be heard in England. The final rise is, however, often omitted, especially in very short sentences and in polite phrases: as *cóme sta\?* *how do you do?*

4. (a) Exclamations of surprise begin very high, and sink rapidly: as *sênti\!* *no!* *un affár di niênte\!* *you don't say so!*<sup>1</sup> where *un* has the main stress; *per mío bácco!* *I want to know!*<sup>1</sup> with the accent on *per*.

(b) In calling to persons at a distance, the Tuscans sing rather than speak; the usual tune is *do*, *la*, *sol*, the accented syllable being highest: as *Agostína!* *Augustine!* *partênzà!* *all aboard!*

<sup>1</sup> Popular New England equivalents.

## ARTICLES

9. The article is not declined, but it agrees with its noun in gender and number.

## THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

## 10. Masculine:

(a) Sing. *il*, pl. *i*, before a word beginning with any consonant except *s* impure<sup>1</sup> and *z*.

(b) Sing. *lo*, pl. *gli*, before a vowel or *s* impure or *z*.<sup>2</sup>

Before a vowel *lo* becomes *l'*; *gli* becomes *gl'* before *i*.

*il* pádre, *the father*.

*lo* stéssu pádre, *the same father*.

*lo* sciáme, *the swarm*.

*lo* zío, *the uncle*.

*l'* uómo, *the man*.

*l'* insétto, *the insect*.

*i* pádri, *the fathers*.

*gli* stéssi pádri, *the same fathers*.

*gli* sciámi, *the swarms*.

*gli* zíi, *the uncles*.

*gli* uómini, *the men*.

*gl'* insétti, *the insects*.

## 11. Feminine:

Sing. *la*, pl. *le*.

Before a vowel *la* becomes *l'*; *le* becomes *l'* before *e*.

*la* mádre, *the mother*.

*l'* óra, *the hour*.

*l'* érba, *the herb*.

*le* mádri, *the mothers*.

*le* óre, *the hours*.

*l'* érbe, *the herbs*.

12. When the definite article is preceded by one of the prepositions *di*, *da*, *a*, *in*, *con*, *su*, *per*, the article and prepó-

<sup>1</sup> That is, *s* followed by another consonant.

<sup>2</sup> *Li* is sometimes used for *gli*. Some writers use *il*, *i* before *z* and before *sce-* or *sci-*. In poetry *lo* is often used for *il*.

sition are generally contracted into one word, as shown in the following table (con, per are often uncontracted<sup>1</sup>):

	il	i	lo	gli	la	le	l'
di, of	del	déi or de'	déllo	dégli	délla	délle	dell'
da, by	dal	dái or da'	dállo	dágli	dálla	dálle	dall'
a, to	al	ái or a'	állo	ágli	álla	álle	all'
in, in	nel	néi or ne'	néllo	négli	nélla	nélle	nell'
con, with	col	cói or co'	cóllo	cógli	cólla	cólle	coll'
su, on	sul	súi or su'	súllo	súgli	súlla	súlle	sull'
per, for	pel	péi or pe'	per lo	per gli	per la	per le	per l'

del pádre, of the father.  
 állo spécchio, to the mirror.  
 cólla mádre, with the mother.  
 sull' uómo, on the man.

dái pádri, by the fathers.  
 négli spécchi, in the mirrors.  
 cólle mádri, with the mothers.  
 per gli uómini, for the men.

(a) The word *some* is frequently rendered in Italian by *di* with the definite article. This is called the *partitive* construction.

Dátemi del vino.  
 Délle bélle còse.

Give me some wine.  
 Some fine things.

13. In the following cases the definite article is used in Italian, though not in English:

(a) Before the possessive adjectives:

Il nôstro giardíno.  
 I suói fratèlli.

Our garden.  
 His brothers.

When, however, the possessive qualifies an otherwise unmodified noun in the singular expressing relationship, the article is generally omitted: as *mía mádre*, *my mother*. For a fuller statement, see 45, a.

<sup>1</sup> Some writers, especially poets, prefer to keep other prepositions separate from the article.



(b) Before an abstract noun or one denoting a whole class; but not before one designating a part of a class:

L' uômo propône.	<i>Man proposes (i.e., all mankind).</i>
I fiôri nâscono dal sême.	<i>Flowers spring from the seed (i.e., all flowers).</i>
La môrte è il peggiôre déi mâli.	<i>Death is the worst of evils (i.e., death in general, and all evils).</i>

BUT

Il mio giardinô è tûtto fiorito; rôse, gîgli, viôle mândano un odôre soâve.	<i>My garden is all in flower; roses, lilies, violets send forth a sweet fragrance (i.e., some roses, etc.).</i>
---	--

(c) Before a noun and adjective used either in a specific or in a general (but not in a partitive) sense:

L' ânno scôrso.	<i>Last year (i.e., the last year).</i>
Il pôvero Lufgi non viêne.	<i>(The) poor Lewis doesn't come.</i>
Gli uômini buôni.	<i>Good men (i.e., all good men).</i>

BUT

Hô trovâto dappertûtto uômini buôni.	<i>I have found (some) good men everywhere.</i>
--------------------------------------	---

(d) Before a title followed by a proper name:

La regîna Vittôria.	<i>Queen Victoria.</i>
Il signôr Brûni.	<i>Mr. Brown.</i>

It is not used, however, before Don, Messêr, and Ser.

(e) Before family names; often before familiar given names of women; occasionally before familiar given names of men:

Il Biâncchi è môrto.	<i>White is dead.</i>
La Pâtî cânta.	<i>Patti sings.</i>
Conôseo l' Olîvia.	<i>I know Olivia.</i>
Viêne il Tônio.	<i>Tony is coming.</i>

(f) Before names of provinces, countries, and continents:

la Toscâna, <i>Tuscany.</i>	all' Itâlia, <i>to Italy.</i>
la Svîzzera, <i>Switzerland.</i>	per l' Eurôpa, <i>for Europe.</i>

But the article is omitted after in in phrases that denote going to or dwelling in a country; and often after di or in when the

preposition with the name of a country is equivalent to an adjective of nationality:

Vádo in Germánia.  
Rimángo in Fráncia.  
La regína d' Inghiltérra.

Il víno di Spágna.

Il teátro in Itália.

*I go to Germany.*  
*I remain in France.*  
*The queen of England (i.e., the English queen).*  
*The wine of Spain (i.e., Spanish wine).*  
*The drama in Italy (i.e., the Italian drama).*

The article is not used regularly with names of cities: as *vedrémo Róma*, *we shall see Rome*. *La Spêzia*, however, has the article; and so have a few others.

In all the above cases (beginning with 13, *a*) the article, unless it would be employed in English, is omitted when the noun is used as a vocative or is modified by a numeral or a pronominal adjective. It is often omitted in lists.

Signóra Mónti, cóme sta?  
Itália, ti rivédo.  
Viêni, amíco mío.  
Dúe bellíssimi cáni.  
Quêsta súa ôpera.  
Ha parécchi vízi.  
Féde, speránza, carità.

*Mrs. Monti, how do you do?*  
*Italy, I see thee again.*  
*Come, my friend.*  
*Two very fine dogs.*  
*This work of his.*  
*He has several bad habits.*  
*Faith, hope, and charity.*

## THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE

### 14. Masculine:

(a) *Un* before a vowel or any consonant except *s* impure and *z*.

(b) *Uno* before *s* impure or *z*.<sup>1</sup>

un pádre, *a father.*  
un anéllo, *a ring.*  
úno sciáme, *a swarm.*

un uômo, *a man.*  
úno spêcchio, *a mirror.*  
úno zío, *an uncle.*

Note that masculine *un* before a vowel has no apostrophe.

<sup>1</sup> Some writers use *un* before *z* and before *sce-* or *sci-*.

## 15. Feminine:

Úna, which becomes un' before a vowel.

úna mádre, *a mother.*

un' óra, *an hour.*

16. In the following cases the indefinite article, though expressed in English, is omitted in Italian:

(a) Before a predicate noun expressing occupation, condition, rank, or nationality, and not accompanied by an adjective.

Égli è poêta, *he is a poet.*

Sóno marchése, *I am a marquis.*

Siête italiáno, *you are an Italian.*

È mêdico, *he is a doctor.*

(b) Generally before an antecedent (of a relative clause) used in apposition to a preceding noun modified by a definite article or a demonstrative pronoun.

L' Árno, fúme che travêrsa  
Firênze.

*The Arno, a river which traverses  
Florence.*

(c) After da meaning *as, like, or for.* See 79, g.

Da uômo.

*Like a man.*

## NOUNS

17. Italian nouns are not declined. Possession is denoted by the preposition *di*:

Lo spêcchio di mío pádre.

*My father's looking-glass.*

## GENDER

18. There are no neuter nouns in Italian.<sup>1</sup>

Nouns denoting males and females keep their natural gender; except *creatúra, creature; guída, guide; guárdia,*

<sup>1</sup> Latin neuters become masculine in Italian; masculines and feminines retain their Latin gender. This rule has very few exceptions.

*guard*; *persôna*, *person*; *sentinêlla*, *sentinel*; *spia*, *spy*; *staf-fétta*, *courier*; *vedétta*, *scout*; which are feminine.

*il fratêllo*, *the brother*.

*mia sorêlla*, *my sister*.

*il poêta*, *the poet*.

*la poetéssa*, *the poetess*.

*ûna spia*, *a spy*.

*la nôstra guida*, *our guide*.

19. Of nouns denoting objects without sex some are masculine, some feminine. Their gender can often be determined by the final letter. All Italian nouns end in -a, -e, -i, -o, or -u.<sup>1</sup>

(a) Those ending in -a are feminine; except *colêra*, *cholera*; *qual-côsa*, *something*; Greek neuters in -ma,<sup>2</sup> many geographical names, and a few other words, mostly foreign.

*un' ôra*, *an hour*.

*un telegrâmma*, *a telegram*.

*il Canadà*, *Canada*.

*il sofà*, *the sofa*.

(b) Of those ending in -e and -i some are masculine, some feminine. All ending in -ziône, -giône, or -ùdine are feminine.

*il fiûme*, *the river*.

*la páce*, *peace*.

*un dì*, *a day*.

*ûna metrôpoli*, *a metropolis*.

*la ragiône*, *the reason*.

*la servitùdine*, *service*.

(c) Those ending in -o are masculine; except *máno*, *hand*.

*il ginôcchio*, *the knee*.

*la máno*, *the hand*.

(d) Those ending in -u are feminine; except *soprappiù*, *surplus*, and a few foreign words.

*la virtù*, *virtue*.

*il bambù*, *bamboo*.

20. Any other part of speech (except an adjective<sup>3</sup>) used as a noun must be masculine: as *il viaggiâre*, *traveling*.

21. Masculine names of trees in -o or -e have a feminine form in -a or -e respectively, denoting their fruit; but *il dát-*

<sup>1</sup> A few foreign nouns used in Italian end in a consonant: as *lâpis*, *pencil* (*i lâpis*, *the pencils*). Nouns in -o or -e often drop that vowel if the preceding consonant is l, n, or r: as *câne* = *can*, *dog*.

<sup>2</sup> Mostly scientific terms.

<sup>3</sup> Adjectives of course have the gender of the nouns they represent. An adjective used as an abstract noun is masculine: *il bello*, *the beautiful* = *beauty*.



tero, *date*, il fíco, *fig*, il limóne, *lemon*, il pómo, *apple*, are always the same, whether denoting the tree or the fruit.

un susíno, *a plum tree*.

úna susína, *a plum*.

il nóce, *the walnut tree*.

la nóce, *the walnut*.

quésti fíchi, *these fig trees, these figs*.

## NUMBER

22. Feminines in unaccented *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e*.

la stráda, *the street*.

le stráde, *the streets*.

úna bugía, *a lie*.

le bugie, *lies*.

(a) Feminines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-che* and *-ghe* respectively (the *h* being inserted merely to indicate that the *c* and *g* keep their hard sound).

un' óca, *a goose*.

mólte óche, *many geese*.

la bottéga, *the shop*.

parécchie bottéghe, *several shops*.

(b) Nouns in unaccented *-cia* and *-gia* form their plural in *-ce* and *-ge* respectively.<sup>1</sup>

la guáncia, *the cheek*.

le guánce, *the cheeks*.

úna ciliégia, *a cherry*.

tánte ciliêge, *so many cherries*.

23. Masculines in unaccented *-a* and *all* nouns in unaccented *-o* and *-e* (not *-ie*) form their plural in *-i*.<sup>2</sup>

un poêta, *a poet*.

dúe poêti, *two poets*.

lo zío, *the uncle*.

gli zii, *the uncles*.

la máno, *the hand*.

le mic máni, *my hands*.

un mése, *a month*.

tre mési, *three months*.

la corníce, *the frame*.

quáttro corníci, *four frames*.

(a) Masculines in *-ca* and *-ga* form their plural in *-chi* and *-ghi* respectively.

il monárca, *the monarch*.

i monárcchi, *the monarchs*.

il collêga, *the colleague*.

i collêghi, *the colleagues*.

<sup>1</sup> *Província* has *provincie*. In general borrowed words and words whose plural is necessarily very rare keep the *i*: *audácia*, *audácie*.

<sup>2</sup> In old Italian and in poetry words in *-ello* and *-ale* often form their plural in *-egli* or *-ei*, *-agli* or *-ai*: *capéllo*, *capégli*; *animále*, *animái*.

(b) Nouns in unaccented *-io* form their plural by changing *-io* to *-i* (often written *î*, *j*, or *ii*).

lo spêcchio, *the mirror*.  
il ciliêgio, *the cherry tree*.

gli spêcchi, *the mirrors*.  
i ciliêgi, *the cherry trees*.

(c) Nouns in *-go* form their plural in *-ghi*. Nouns in *-co* form their plural in *-chi* if the penult is accented, otherwise in *-ci*.

il castîgo, *the punishment*.  
un catálogo, *a catalogue*.  
il fîco, *the fig*.  
antîco, *ancient*.  
un mêdico, *a doctor*.

i castîghi, *the punishments*.  
dúe catálogos, *two catalogues*.  
cínque fîchi, *five figs*.  
gli antîchi, *the ancients*.  
sêi mêdici, *six doctors*.

This rule has a number of exceptions. In the following lists, words whose irregular plural is rare are omitted.

1. Compound nouns in *-logo* denoting persons engaged in the sciences, and all compound nouns in *-fago* form their plural in *-gi*.<sup>1</sup>

il fisiôlogo, *the physiologist*.  
antropôfago, *cannibal*.

i fisiôlogi, *physiologists*.  
antropôfagi, *cannibals*.

2. The following words form their plural in *-ci*, although the penult is accented:

amîco                  grêco                  inimîco                  nemîco                  pôrco<sup>2</sup>

Grêco has a regular plural in the expression *vîni grêchi*.

3. The following words form their plural in *-chi*, although the penult is unaccented:

ábbaco	fârmaco	lástrico	rammârico	strâscico
acrôstico	indaco	mânico	rîsico	tôssico
cárico <sup>3</sup>	intônaco	pârroco	sciâtico	tráfîco
diméntico <sup>3</sup>	intrínseco	pízzico	stômaco	válico <sup>4</sup>

Acrôstico and fârmaco have also regular plurals.

<sup>1</sup> Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *flemmagôgo*, *idragôgo*, *metallûrgo*, *sârgo* (also reg. plur.), *sortilego*. *Magicians* = *mâghi*; *Magi* = *mâgi*.

<sup>2</sup> Likewise the rare words: *apríco*, *lombríco* (also reg.), *uvamîco*, *víco*.

<sup>3</sup> Likewise its compounds.

<sup>4</sup> Likewise the rare or obsolete words: *filáccico*, *mântaco* (also reg.), *ostâtico*, *sfiláccico*, *stâtico* (noun), *úncico*.

(d) The following masculines in -o have an irregular plural in a which is feminine:

centináio, *hundred*.  
migliáio, *thousand*.

míglío, *mile*.  
páio, *pair*.

uôvo, *egg*.

Many masculines in -o have this irregular feminine plural in -a besides the regular masculine plural in -i. The most common are:

bráccio, *arm*.  
díto, *finger*.  
frútto, *fruit*.  
ginôcchio, *knee*.

grído, *shout*.  
lábbro, *lip*.  
légno, *wood*.  
mêmbro, *member*.

múro, *wall*.  
orécchio, *ear*.  
ôsso, *bone*.

un páio, *a pair*.  
il mío bráccio, *my arm*.  
il lábbro, *the lip*.  
un ôsso, *a bone*.

sêtto páia, *seven pairs*.  
le túe bráccia, *thy arms*.  
le lábbra or i lábbri, *the lips*.  
le ôssa or gli ôssi, *the bones*.

Bráccio, ginôcchio, lábbro, and orécchio nearly always have the irregular plural when denoting the two *arms, knees, lips, or ears* belonging to the same body.

24. All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in -i, -ie, -u, an accented vowel, or a consonant, are invariable.

il re, *the king*.  
il bríndisi, *the toast*.  
úna spêcie, *a kind*.  
la virtù, *virtue*.  
úna città, *a city*.  
l' ômnibus, *the omnibus*.

i re, *the kings*.  
i bríndisi, *the toasts*.  
ôtto spêcie, *eight kinds*.  
le virtù, *the virtues*.  
diêci città, *ten cities*.  
gli ômnibus, *the omnibusses*.

25. The following nouns have irregular plurals:

búe, *ox*, pl. buêi.  
díó, *god*, pl. dêi.<sup>1</sup>

móglie, *wife*, pl. mógli.  
uômo, *man*, pl. uômini.

<sup>1</sup> The article used with dêi is gli: gli dêi.

## ADJECTIVES

26. Adjectives agree with their nouns in gender and number. An adjective modifying two nouns of different genders is generally put in the masculine plural.

Il gatto è pulito.

*The cat is neat.*

Stanze pulite.

*Neat rooms.*

Una casa e un giardino bellini.

*A pretty house and garden.*

La ragazza è bellina.

*The girl is pretty.*

27. Numeral and pronominal adjectives, bello, bravo, buono, and the commonest adjectives of size and quantity, precede their nouns. Adjectives of nationality, shape, and material follow.

Adjectives whose use is prompted by emotion, and adjectives used in a figurative sense, generally precede.

Otherwise, of the noun and adjective, the one that contains the chief idea comes last.

Due cani.

*Two dogs.*

Troppo pane.

*Too much bread.*

La buona madre.

*The good mother.*

Le grandi città.

*Great cities.*

Un libro francese.

*A French book.*

Questa palla rotonda.

*This round ball.*

Pover' uomo!

*Poor man!*

Una nera menzogna.

*A black falsehood.*

La vostra gentilissima lettera.

*Your kind letter.*

È un uomo gentilissimo.

*He is a kind man.*

## GENDER AND NUMBER

28. Adjectives ending in -o are masculine, and form their feminine in -a. Adjectives in -e are invariable in the singular.

buono stivalétto, *good boot.*

buona scarpa, *good shoe.*

ragazzo felice, *happy boy.*

ragazza felice, *happy girl.*

29. Adjectives form their plural in the same way as nouns (see 22, 23): -o, pl. -i; -a, pl. -e; -e, pl. always -i.

sêi buôni cassettoni, *six good bureaux.*      ôtto buône sêggiole, *eight good chairs.*

dúe uômini felici, *two happy men.*      tre dónne felici, *three happy women.*

(a) Parécchi, *several*, has for its feminine parécchie.

(b) Quálche, *some*, is used only in the singular, even when the meaning is plural: as quálche vólta, *sometimes*.

(c) When preceding a noun, bello, *beautiful*, has forms similar to those of the definite article; and Santo, *Saint*, and gránde, *great*, have corresponding forms in the singular.<sup>1</sup> Buôno, *good*, when preceding its noun, has a singular similar to the indefinite article. The masculine of these words (which is the only irregular part) is, therefore, as follows:

Before any consonant except s impure or z: bel, San, gran, buon;  
pl. bèi, Sánti, grándi, buôni.

Before s impure or z: bello, Santo, gránde, buôno; pl. bégli, Sánti, grándi, buôni.

Before a vowel: bell', Sant', grand', buon; pl. bégli, Sánti, grándi, buôni.

When used *after* a noun or in the predicate these adjectives have their full forms (bello, bèlli, Santo, Sánti, gránde, grándi, buôno, buôni).

Un bël quádرو.

*A fine picture.*

Dúe bèi lètti.

*Two fine beds.*

Un bello scaffálo.

*A fine bookcase.*

Quáttro bégli stiváli.

*Four fine boots.*

Un bèll' ándito.

*A fine hall.*

Mólti bégli orolôgi.

*Many fine clocks.*

Una bêlla stúfa.

*A fine stove.*

Parécchie belle tênde.

*Several fine curtains.*

Il palázзо è bello.

*The palace is fine.*

<sup>1</sup> Gran is, moreover, often used in the fem. sing. (for gránde), and sometimes in the plur. (for grándi); it is regularly used before fem. sing. nouns in -e, and in the expression úna gran bêlla (or brútta) còsa. Gránde, on the other hand, is occasionally used for gran.



Le sèdie son bèle.  
 San Piètro, Santo Stéfano e  
 Sant' Antònio.  
 Un gran fuòco.  
 Gràndi camíni.  
 Il grànde scaldíno.  
 Dièci gràndi spílli.  
 Un grànde sciáme.  
 Il grànde zípulo.  
 Un grand' armádio.  
 Vénti gràndi álberi.  
 Úna grànde cámera.  
 Cinque gràndi finèstre.  
 Il salòtto è mólto grànde.  
 Un buòn lúme.  
 Buòni fiammíferi.  
 Il buòno sgabéllo.  
 Nòve buòni scolári.  
 Il buòn ólio.  
 Parécchi buòni ághi.  
 Úna buòna cucína.  
 Le buòne candéle.  
 Il bambíno è buòno.

*The chairs are beautiful.*  
*St. Peter, St. Stephen, and St. Anthony.*  
*A big fire.*  
*Big fireplaces.*  
*The big foot-warmer.*  
*Ten big pins.*  
*A great swarm.*  
*The large bung.*  
*A big wardrobe.*  
*Twenty big trees.*  
*A large bedroom.*  
*Five big windows.*  
*The parlor is very large.*  
*A good lamp.*  
*Good matches.*  
*The good stool.*  
*Nine good pupils.*  
*The good oil.*  
*Several good needles.*  
*A good kitchen.*  
*The good candles.*  
*The child is good.*

30. Any adjective of either gender or either number may be used as a noun.

I buòni, *the good.*

la bèle, *the beautiful woman.*

### COMPARISON

31. All Italian adjectives form their comparative by prefixing *più*, *more*, and their superlative by prefixing the definite article to the comparative.

bèllo, *beautiful*; *più bèllo*, *more beautiful*; *il più bèllo*, *the most beautiful*.

lúngo, *long*; *più lúngo*, *longer*; *il più lúngo*, *the longest*.

When the superlative immediately follows the noun, this article is omitted.

La vía *più còrta*.

*The shortest way.*

(a) The following adjectives have an irregular comparison in addition to the regular one:

álto, *high*; piú álto or *superióre*; il piú álto or il *superióre*.  
 báссо, *low*; piú báссо or *inferióre*; il piú báссо or l' *inferióre*.  
 buòno, *good*; piú buòno or *miglióre*<sup>1</sup>; il piú buòno or il *miglióre*.  
 cattívo, *bad*; piú cattívo or *peggióre*<sup>1</sup>; il piú cattívo or il *peggióre*.  
 gránde, *big*; piú gránde or *maggióre*; il piú gránde or il *maggióre*.  
 píccolo, *small*; piú píccolo or *minóre*; il piú píccolo or il *minóre*.

*Higher* and *lower* are commonly rendered by piú álto and piú báссо; *superióre* and *inferióre* generally mean *superior* and *inferior*. *Miglióre* and *peggióre* are more used than piú buòno and piú cattívo, which have the same sense. *Larger* and *smaller* are generally piú gránde and piú píccolo; *maggióre* and *minóre* usually signify *older* and *younger*.

Noi siámo miglióri di lóro.	<i>We are better than they.</i>
Quésta sála da pránzo è la piú gránde.	<i>This dining room is the biggest.</i>
Piétro è il fratéllo minóre.	<i>Peter is the youngest brother.</i>

32. The adverb *less* is expressed by méno, *least* by il méno. As . . . as, so . . . as are tánto . . . quánto, tánto . . . óme, cosí . . . cóme, or simply quánto.

Quélla stánza è la méno bellína.	<i>That room is the least pretty.</i>
Páolo non è tánto buòno cóme Robérto.	<i>Paul isn't so good as Robert.</i>
Giovánni è álto quánto Filíppo.	<i>John is as tall as Philip.</i>

33. *Than* is *che*.

L' albérgo è piú gránde che bello.	<i>The hotel is bigger than it is beautiful.</i>
------------------------------------	--

But before a noun, a pronoun, or a numeral *than* is rendered by the preposition *di* (see 12).

Riccárdo è peggióre di me.	<i>Richard is worse than I.</i>
Vói siéte piú ríchi del re.	<i>You are richer than the king.</i>
Méno di cinque.	<i>Less than five.</i>

<sup>1</sup> The adverbs *better* and *worse* are *méglio* and *peggio*.

If, however, this *than* is preceded by a word meaning *rather*, it is translated *che*.

Piuttôsto la môrte che il disonôre. *Rather death than dishonor.*

Before an inflected verb *than* is *che non* or *di quel che*. If the verb has a negative subject, *than* is *che*.

Abbáia più che non môrde. *He barks more than he bites.*  
 Prométto méno di quel che do. *I promise less than I give.*  
 Più liêto che nessún figlio lo êra státô. *Happier than any son had been.*

34. *The more . . . the more, the less . . . the less*, are *più . . . più, méno . . . méno*. *More and less* after a number are *di più, di méno*. In speaking of time, *longer* after a negative is *più*.

Più stúdio, più impáro. *The more I study, the more I learn.*  
 Trénta giòrni di méno. *Thirty days less.*  
 Non lo vediámo più. *We see him no longer.*

## AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES; NUMERALS

### AUGMENTATIVE AND DIMINUTIVE ENDINGS

35. Instead of a word expressing size or quality, the Italians often use a suffix. This suffix may be added to a noun, an adjective, or an adverb. When added to an adjective, and generally when added to a noun, it takes the gender of the word to which it is affixed: occasionally, however, a suffix with masculine termination is added to a feminine noun, which thereby becomes masculine. A word loses its final vowel before a suffix; but the preceding consonant, if it be *c* or *g*, must keep its former quality: as *Cárlo*+*íno*=*Carlíno*, *vóce*+*óne*=*vocióne*, *pôco*+*íno*=*pochíno*, *adágio*+*íno*=*adagíno*.

(a) The commonest ending is *-íssimo* (fem. *-íssima*), *very*, which in general is added only to adjectives and adverbs. Adverbs in *-mênte* add the *-íssima* before the *-mênte* (see 85). Any adjective may take it, and it is very often used in cases where it would be entirely superfluous in English.

<i>largo</i> , <i>wide</i> .	<i>larghíssimo</i> , <i>very wide</i> .
<i>bene</i> , <i>well</i> .	<i>beníssimo</i> , <i>very well</i> .
<i>grande</i> , <i>big</i> .	<i>grandíssimo</i> , <i>very big</i> .
<i>fa un tẽmpo bellissimo</i> , <i>it's beautiful weather</i> .	<i>bellissimamẽnte</i> , <i>very beautifully</i> .

(b) The principal suffix denoting bigness is *-õne*; it is always masculine, but has a rare feminine form, *-õna*.

<i>libro</i> , <i>book</i> .	<i>un librõne</i> , <i>a big book</i> .
<i>casa</i> , <i>house</i> .	<i>un casõne</i> , <i>a large house</i> .
<i>boccia</i> , <i>decanter</i> .	<i>una bocciõna</i> , <i>a big decanter</i> .

(c) The most important suffixes denoting smallness are *-ino*, *-cino*, *-icino*, *-etto*, *-ello*, *-cello*, *-icello*, *-arello*, *-erello*, *-otto*, *-uccio*, *-uzzo*, *-uolo*, with their fem. *-ina*, etc. These endings, especially *-uccio*, are often used to express affection; some of them may be used to express pity or contempt. *Ôtto* sometimes means *somewhat large* instead of *small*.

<i>sorëlla</i> , <i>sister</i> .	<i>sorellina</i> , <i>little sister</i> .
<i>bello</i> , <i>beautiful</i> .	<i>bellino</i> , <i>pretty</i> .
<i>brutto</i> , <i>ugly</i> .	<i>bruttino</i> , <i>rather ugly</i> .
<i>piazza</i> , <i>square</i> .	<i>piazzëtta</i> , <i>little square</i> .
<i>Giorgio</i> , <i>George</i> .	<i>Giorgëtto</i> , <i>Georgie</i> .
<i>campãna</i> , <i>bell</i> .	<i>campanello</i> , <i>little bell</i> .
<i>áquila</i> , <i>eagle</i> .	<i>aquilotto</i> , <i>eaglet</i> .
<i>casa</i> , <i>house</i> .	<i>casotta</i> , <i>rather large house</i> .
<i>Giovãnni</i> , <i>John</i> .	<i>Giovannuccio</i> , <i>dear little Johnny</i> .
<i>pazzo</i> , <i>mad</i> .	<i>pazzarella</i> , <i>poor mad woman</i> .
<i>põvero</i> , <i>poor</i> .	<i>poverini</i> , <i>poor things!</i>

(d) The ending *-accio* denotes worthlessness.

<i>rõba</i> , <i>stuff</i> , <i>goods</i> .	<i>robaccia</i> , <i>trash</i> .
<i>tẽmpo</i> , <i>weather</i> .	<i>tempaccio</i> , <i>nasty weather</i> .
<i>Alfrẽdo</i> , <i>Alfred</i> .	<i>Alfredaccio</i> , <i>naughty Alfred</i> .

36. Of the endings added to nouns *-ino* is by far the most common; the only ones that are freely used to form new compounds are *-ino*, *little*, *-one*, *great*, *-uccio*, *dear*, and *-accio*, *bad*. In very many cases, endings lose their character of independent suffixes, and become inseparable parts of certain words, whose meanings they often change: as *scála*, *stairway*; *scalino*, *stair*; *scalétto*, *ladder*. So *brother*, *sister* are always *fratello*, *sorèlla*. Some suffixes (as *-uolo*) are rarely used except in this way. Others (as *-cino*, *-icino*, *-ello*, *-cèllo*, *-icèllo*, *-arèllo*, *-erèllo*) cannot be attached to any word at pleasure, their use being determined by precedent or euphony.

37. Sometimes several suffixes are added at once to the same word: as *ládرو*, *thief*; *ladróne*, *terrible thief*; *ladroncèllo*, *terrible little thief*.

## NUMERALS

38. The cardinal numerals are:

1, <i>úno</i> .	15, <i>quíndici</i> .	28, <i>ventóttro</i> or	101, <i>centúno</i> or
2, <i>dúe</i> .	16, <i>sédici</i> .	<i>vent' ótto</i> .	<i>cent' úno</i> .
3, <i>tre</i> .	17, <i>diciassétte</i> .	29, <i>ventínove</i> .	105, <i>centocínque</i> .
4, <i>quáttro</i> .	18, <i>dicióttro</i> .	30, <i>trénta</i> .	115, <i>centoquíndici</i> .
5, <i>cínque</i> .	19, <i>diciannove</i> .	31, <i>trentúno</i> or	125, <i>cento venti-</i>
6, <i>sèi</i> .	20, <i>vénti</i> .	<i>trent' úno</i> .	<i>cínque</i> .
7, <i>sétte</i> .	21, <i>ventúno</i> or	32, <i>trentadúe</i> .	200, <i>dugénto</i> or
8, <i>óttro</i> .	<i>vent' úno</i> .	40, <i>quaránta</i> .	<i>duccénto</i> .
9, <i>nove</i> .	22, <i>ventidúe</i> .	50, <i>cinquánta</i> .	250, <i>dugénto cin-</i>
10, <i>dièci</i> .	23, <i>ventitrè</i> .	60, <i>sessánta</i> .	<i>quánta</i> .
11, <i>úndici</i> .	24, <i>ventiquáttro</i> .	70, <i>settánta</i> .	300, <i>trecénto</i> .
12, <i>dódici</i> .	25, <i>venticínque</i> .	80, <i>ottánta</i> .	400, <i>quattrocénto</i> .
13, <i>trédici</i> .	26, <i>ventisèi</i> .	90, <i>novánta</i> .	1000, <i>mílle</i> .
14, <i>quattórdici</i> .	27, <i>ventisétte</i> .	100, <i>cénto</i> .	2000, <i>dúe mílla</i> .

*Úno* has a feminine *úna*; when used *adjectively* it has the same forms as the indefinite article; so also *ventúno*, etc.



The plural of *mille* is *míla*. *A million* is *un milióne* or *milióne*, of which the plural is *milióni* or *millióni*.

1. No conjunction is used between the different parts of a number: as *dugênto quaránta*, *two hundred and forty*. No indefinite article is used before *cênto* and *mille*: as *cênto líbri*, *a hundred books*.

2. *Cênto*, *dugênto*, etc., when followed by another numeral of more than two syllables may lose the final syllable -to: as *seicênto cinquánta* or *seicencinquánta*, *six hundred and fifty*.

3. *Eleven hundred*, *twelve hundred*, etc., must be rendered *millecênto*, *mille dugênto*, etc.: as *mille ottocênto ottantasêtte*, 1887.

4. *Both*, *all three*, etc., are *tútti* (fem. *tútte*) e *dúe*, *tútti* (fem. *tútte*) e *tre*, etc.

(a) If the noun modified by *ventúno*, *trentúno*, etc., follows this numeral, it is regularly in the singular; as *trentún giòrno*, *thirty-one days*. Sometimes, however, the noun precedes the numeral, and then it is in the plural.

*Sessantúna líra*, or *lire sessantúna*.      *Sixty-one francs*.

(b) In dates the definite article is prefixed to the number representing the year, if that number does not follow the name of a month. For instance, 1915 is *il 1915*.

*Nel mille ottocênto ottantasêtte*.      *In 1887*.

(c) *What time is it?* is *che óra è?* or *che óre sóno?* *It is six*, etc., is *sóno le sêi*, etc., *óre* being understood. *One o'clock* is *il tócco*.

*Sóno le dúe e mêzzo*.      *It's half past two.*  
*Sóno le tre e diêci*.      *It's ten minutes past three.*  
*Ci máncano vénti minúti álle quáttro*.      *It's twenty minutes to four.*  
*Sóno le cinque méno un quárto*.      *It's a quarter to five.*

## 39. The ordinal numerals are:

1st, primo.	12th, duodécimo or	20th, ventésimo.
2d, secóndo.	décimo secóndo.	21st, ventésimo primo or
3d, têrzo.	13th, tredicésimo or	ventunésimo.
4th, quáрто.	décimo têrzo.	22d, ventésimo secóndo
5th, quánto.	14th, quattordicésimo or	or ventiduésimo.
6th, sêsto.	décimo quáрто.	30th, trentésimo.
7th, sêttimo.	15th, quindicésimo or	100th, centésimo.
8th, ottávo.	décimo quánto.	101st, centésimo primo.
9th, nôno.	16th, décimo sêsto.	115th, centoquindicésimo.
10th, décimo.	17th, décimo sêttimo.	200th, dugentésimo.
11th, undécimo or	18th, décimo ottávo.	1000th, millésimo.
décimo primo.	19th, décimo nôno.	2000th, duemilésimo.

All of them form their feminines and plurals like other adjectives in -o.

Le settantésime quinte cose.      *The 75th things.*

(a) Ordinal numerals are used after the words *book, chapter*, and the names of rulers; but no article intervenes.

Cárlo secóndo.	<i>Charles the Second.</i>
Pío nôno.	<i>Pius IX.</i>
Líbro têrzo.	<i>Book the Third.</i>
Capítolo quáрто.	<i>Chapter four.</i>

(b) For the day of the month, except the first, a cardinal number is used.

Il dì cinque d' apríle or il	<i>The fifth of April.</i>
cinque apríle.	
Il primo di mággio.	<i>The first of May.</i>

(c) *The fourteenth century* is il sêcolo décimo quáрто or il Trecento (i. e. mille trecênto). Il Dugênto, il Quattrocênto, il Cinquecênto are often used for the 13th, 15th, and 16th centuries and the later century names may be similarly abbreviated.

(d) *A third, a fourth, a fifth*, etc., are un têrzo, un quáрто, un quánto, etc. *Half* is la metà; the adjective *half* is mêzzo.

40. *A couple or a pair* is *un páio*. *A dozen* is *úna dozina*. The expressions *úna decína*, *úna ventína*, *úna trentína*, etc., *un centináio*, *un migliáio*, mean *about ten*, *about twenty*, etc. (see 23, d). *Once, twice*, etc., are *úna vólta*, *dúe vólte*, etc.

*Ún páio di scárpe.*

*A pair of shoes.*

*Úna cinquantína di persóne.*

*Some fifty persons.*

*L' ho visto parécchie vólte.*

*I've seen it several times.*

## DEMONSTRATIVE, INTERROGATIVE, RELATIVE, AND POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

41. For the indefinite pronouns, see 86-91.

42. 1. The demonstratives used adjectively are *quésto*,<sup>1</sup> *this*, and *quéllo* or *cotéstó*, *that*. *Cotéstó* (also *codéstó*) is used of objects associated with the person addressed. *Quésto* and *cotéstó* are inflected like other adjectives; but they generally drop *o* before a vowel. *Quélló* is inflected like *bêllo* (see 29, c).

*quést' uómo*, *this man*.

*quéste ragázzc*, *these girls*.

*quél bambíno*, *that infant*.

*quéi fanciúlli*, *those children*.

*quéll' amíco*, *that friend*.

*quégli spòsi*, *that couple*.

*quélló zío*, *that uncle*.

*quélle signóre*, *those ladies*.

*Quésto* and *quélló* are also used substantively for *this*, *that*, *this one*, *that one*: as *fáte quésto*, *non fáte quélló*, *do this*, *don't do that*.

2. *This man* is translated by *quésti*; *that man* by *quégli*, *quéi*, or *cotésti* (rare); these words are invariable, refer only to persons, and are used only in the nominative singular. *Costúi* and *colúi* mean respectively the same as *quésti* and

<sup>1</sup> In archaic or literary Italian *éssó* is sometimes used for *quésto*.

quégli, but are not defective, having a feminine singular costêi, colêi, and a plural (both genders alike) costóro, colóro. Costúì is often used in a depreciative sense.

Quésti è francése e quegli è tedéseco.	<i>This man is French and that one is German.</i>
Chi è costúì?	<i>Who is this fellow?</i>
Parlo di colúì.	<i>I speak of that man.</i>

3. Ciò, *this, that*, is invariable, and represents a whole idea, not a single word:

Ciò è véro.	<i>That's so.</i>
-------------	-------------------

(a) Quéllo and quéstó, quegli and quésti mean also *the former, the latter*.

(b) *He who* is colúì che, or simply chi. *The one who, whom, which, that which, what*, is quéllo che or quél che.

Chi lavóra or colúì che lavóra.	<i>He who works.</i>
Quél che díco ío.	<i>The one I mean.</i>
A quél che sênto.	<i>From what I hear.</i>

43. The interrogative *who, whom*, is chi. *What?* used substantively is che, che còsa, or còsa.<sup>1</sup> *What?* used adjectively is che or quále. *Which?* is quále.

Quále has a plural quáli; chi and che are invariable.

*How much?* is quánto (-a); *how many?* is quánti (-e).

Chi védo?	<i>Whom do I see?</i>
Di chi parláte?	<i>Of whom do you speak?</i>
Ditemi chi viðene.	<i>Tell me who is coming.</i>
Che vògliono?	<i>What do they want?</i>
Che còsa díce?	<i>What does he say?</i>
Che or quáli líbri avéte com- práto?	<i>What books did you buy?</i>
Quále di quésti volúmi è il prímo?	<i>Which of these volumes is the first?</i>
Quánte vólte te l'ho détto!	<i>How many times I have told you!</i>

<sup>1</sup> Còsa (as còsa díce?) is generally avoided in written Italian. Note that chi is used in *indirect* as well as in *direct* questions.



(a) The interrogative *whose* is *di chi*.

*Di chi è quèsto bigliétto?      Whose card is this?*

(b) In exclamations *what a*, *what* are rendered by *che* or *quále* without any article.

*Che bél paése!      What a beautiful country!*

44. The principal relative pronouns are *che*, *cúi*, *il quále*: they are all applied to both persons and things, and mean *who*, *whom*, *which*, or *that*. *Il quále* is inflected (*la quále*, *i quáli*, *le quáli*). *Che* and *cúi* are invariable: in general *che* is used only as subject and direct object, *cúi* only after prepositions or as indirect object. In poetry *ónde* is often used to signify *of which* or *from which*.

<i>La lingua che si párla.</i>	<i>The language which we speak.</i>
<i>L' uòmo del quále si trátta.</i>	<i>The man of whom we are speaking.</i>
<i>Le persóne a cúi or álle quáli párla.</i>	<i>The persons to whom I speak.</i>
<i>Lo scrítto di cúi párla.</i>	<i>The work I am speaking of.</i>

1. As subject or direct object *che* is preferred to *il quále*, unless clearness requires the latter.

<i>Le figlie che stúdíano.</i>	<i>The daughters who are studying.</i>
<i>Le figlie dégli Americáni, le quáli stúdíano.</i>	<i>The Americans' daughters, who are studying.</i>

2. The relative *whose* is *il cúi* or *del quále*.

<i>Úna signóra, il cúi nóme è Lucía.</i>	<i>A lady whose name is Lucy.</i>
<i>Un uòmo, le cúi figlie conóscio.</i>	<i>A man whose daughters I know.</i>
<i>L' autóre, del cúi líbro si párla.</i>	<i>The author whose book we are speaking of.</i>
<i>Le chiése délle quáli si védono le cúpole.</i>	<i>The churches whose domes we see</i>

3. The relative cannot be omitted in Italian.

<i>Le case che ho compráte.</i>	<i>The houses I have bought.</i>
---------------------------------	----------------------------------

(a) *Such . . . as* is *tále . . . quále*; in poetry *tále*, *quále* have a plural *tái*, *quái* instead of *táli*, *quáli*. *As much as* is *tánto quánto*; *as many as* is *tánti quánti*.

*Quále è il pádre tále è il figlio. As is the father, so is the son.*

(b) *He who, him who* is *chi* or *colui che* (see 42, b).

*Chi ha la sanità è ricco. He who has health is rich.*

*Coldi che lavóra è conténto. He who works is satisfied.*

*Amiámo chi ci áma. We love him who loves us.*

(c) *Whoever* is *chiúnque*; *whatever* as a pronoun is *tútto quel che* or *checchè*, as an adjective *quále che*, *qualúnque che*, *qualúnque*, *per quánto*. These words, excepting *tútto quel che*, all take the subjunctive. *Checchè* is now but little used.

*Chiúnque siáte. Whoever you may be.*

*Checchè facciáte, fátelo bène. Whatever you do, do it well.*

*Tútto quel che voléte. Whatever you wish.*

*Quáli che síanò i vòstri mótivi. Whatever your motives may be.*

*Qualúnque síanò i suòi talénti. Whatever his talents may be.*

*In qualúnque státo che ío mi tróvi. In whatever condition I may find myself.*

*Per quánte ricchézze egli ábbia. Whatever riches he may have.*

#### 45. The possessive pronouns and adjectives are:

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
	MASC.	FEM.	MASC.	FEM.
<i>my, mine:</i>	<i>il mío</i>	<i>la mía</i>	<i>i mièi</i>	<i>le mie</i>
<i>thy, thine:</i>	<i>il túo</i>	<i>la túa</i>	<i>i tuòi</i>	<i>le tue</i>
<i>his, her, hers, its:</i>	<i>il súo</i>	<i>la súa</i>	<i>i suòi</i>	<i>le sue</i>
<i>our, ours:</i>	<i>il nôstro</i>	<i>la nôstra</i>	<i>i nôstri</i>	<i>le nôstre</i>
<i>your, yours:</i>	<i>il vòstro</i>	<i>la vòstra</i>	<i>i vòstri</i>	<i>le vòstre</i>
<i>their, theirs:</i>	<i>il lóro</i>	<i>la lóro</i>	<i>i lóro</i>	<i>le lóro</i>

*Lóro* is invariable; the others agree with the object possessed:

*il mío náso, my nose.*

*i vòstri ócchi, your eyes.*

*la súa bócca, his, her mouth.*

*le lóro lábbra, their lips.*

When the possessive stands alone in the predicate, the article is omitted if the possessive is used adjectively. To

determine whether the possessive is used adjectively, consider the sentence as the answer to a question. If the sentence answers a question beginning with *whose*, there is no article; if it answers a question beginning with *which*, the article is used.

Quêsto cappêllo è mio.	<i>This hat is mine.</i>	<i>Whose hat?</i>
	<i>Mine.</i>	
Quêsto cappêllo è il mio.	<i>This hat is mine.</i>	<i>Which hat?</i>
	<i>This one.</i>	

(a) The article (unless it might be used in English) is omitted before the possessive:

1. When a numeral, an adjective of quantity, or a demonstrative or interrogative adjective precedes it:

Dúe câni suôi.	<i>Two dogs of his.</i>
BUT I dúe câni suôi.	<i>The two dogs of his or his two dogs.</i>
Mólti miêi amîci.	<i>Many friends of mine.</i>
BUT I mólti miêi amîci.	<i>The many friends of mine or my many friends.</i>
Quêsto túo difétto.	<i>This fault of thine.</i>

2. When the possessive forms part of a title:

Vôstra Maestà.	<i>Your Majesty.</i>
Súa Altézza.	<i>His Highness.</i>

3. When the possessive modifies a noun used in the vocative (in this case the possessive generally follows its noun): as *amîco mio*, *my friend!*

4. The article is generally omitted also when the possessive precedes a noun in the *singular* expressing relationship: as *nôstra mãdre*, *our mother*; compare *le mie figlie*, *my daughters*. But if the noun has a diminutive ending, or another adjective accompanies the noun, the article is not omitted:

Il túo fratellîno.	<i>Thy little brother.</i>
La vôstra gentilîssima sorêlla.	<i>Your kind sister.</i>

Sometimes it is omitted before a *predicate* noun that does not express relationship:

Quêsto signóre è sùo maêstro.	<i>This gentleman is his teacher.</i>
Io lo credêva mío amíco.	<i>I thought him my friend.</i>

5. The article is omitted also in certain standing phrases, such as:

da pártè mîa, <i>for me.</i>	a mòdo sùo, <i>in his own way.</i>
per amór mío, <i>for my sake.</i>	è cólpa vòstra, <i>it's your fault.</i>
in càsa nôstra, <i>in our house.</i>	a càsa súa, <i>to his house.</i>

(b) The possessive, when not necessary for clearness, is usually replaced by a definite article.

Cóme sta la mámma?	<i>How is your mother?</i>
Ha perdúto il giudízio.	<i>He has lost his senses.</i>
Báttono i pièdi.	<i>They stamp their feet.</i>

(c) When the name of the thing possessed is direct object of a verb, the Italians often use instead of the possessive a conjunctive personal pronoun (see 47) and a definite article.

Si stráppa i capélli.	<i>He tears his hair (lit., he tears to himself the hairs).</i>
Mi táglio il díto.	<i>I cut my finger (I cut to myself the finger).</i>
Il cáne gli agguantò la gámbe.	<i>The dog seized his leg (seized to him the leg).</i>

If the thing possessed be a part of the body or clothing, this construction is frequent, even when the name of the thing is not object of a verb.

Mi duòle il capo.	<i>My head aches (to me aches the head).</i>
-------------------	--

(d) When the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, *his, her* are, for the sake of clearness, often rendered *di lui, di lei*:

Égli non conósce il di lei cuóre.	<i>He does not know her heart.</i>
-----------------------------------	------------------------------------

(e) *A . . . of mine, of thine, etc.,* is *un mío, un túo, etc.:*

Úna nôstra cugína.	<i>A cousin of ours.</i>
--------------------	--------------------------



## PERSONAL PRONOUNS

46. Personal pronouns are divided into two classes, conjunctive and disjunctive: the conjunctive forms are those used as direct object of a verb, and as indirect object without a preposition; the disjunctive forms are those used as subject of a verb, and as object of a preposition.

ÈGLI	ve	lo	dà	per	ME.
He	to you	it	gives	for	me.

## CONJUNCTIVE FORMS

47. Conjunctive pronouns are *always unaccented*, and cannot be separated from the verb, which they sometimes follow but oftener precede, as will be explained in 48.

They are used only as direct object of a verb or as indirect object without a preposition. The forms are:

mi, <i>me, to me.</i>	ti, <i>thee, to thee.</i>
ci, <i>us, to us.</i> <sup>1</sup>	vi, <i>you, to you.</i>
si (reflexive), <i>himself, to himself; herself, to herself; itself, to itself.</i>	
si (reflexive), <i>themselves, to themselves.</i>	
lo, <i>him</i> <sup>1</sup> ; gli, <i>to him</i> . <sup>2</sup>	la, <i>her; le, to her.</i>
li, <i>them (masc.); lóro, to them</i> . <sup>2</sup>	le, <i>them (fem.); lóro, to them.</i>

*It* must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. *It* representing not a word, but a whole clause, is *lo*.<sup>3</sup>

Mi conósce.	<i>He knows me.</i>
Ti do i líbri.	<i>I give thee the books.</i>
Ci vedéte.	<i>You see us.</i>
Vi díco tútto.	<i>I tell you everything.</i>

<sup>1</sup> In old Italian and in poetry *ne* is often used for *ci*, and *il* for *lo*.

<sup>2</sup> In conversation *li* is often used for *gli*, and *gli* or *li* for *lóro*.

<sup>3</sup> In certain idiomatic phrases *la* represents an indefinite object: as *pagárla cára*, *to pay dearly for it*.

Si veste.

*He dresses himself.*

Si divêrtono.

*They amuse themselves.*

Ècco l' ôro: ve lo do.

*Here's the gold: I give it to you.*

Ècco la pàlla: la védo.

*Here's the ball: I see it.*

Cóme potéva sapére se lo  
veníva o no? — Lo ha indo-  
vináto.

*How could he tell whether I was  
coming or not? He guessed it.*

1. It will be seen that the third person (not reflexive) has different forms for the direct and the indirect object.

Lo trovái.

*I found him.*

Gli féci un regalo.

*I made him a present.*

La láscia.

*He leaves her.*

Le scríve.

*He writes to her.*

Li cercáte.

*You seek them (masc.).*

Le salutáte.

*You greet them (fem.).*

Mandiámo lóro mille salutí.

*We send them (masc. or fem.) a  
thousand greetings.*

2. The reflexive pronouns of the first and second persons are *mi*; *ti*; *vi*. All plural reflexive pronouns are used also as reciprocal pronouns. A verb is called *reflexive* when it has as *direct* or *indirect* object a *conjunctive* pronoun representing the same person as its subject.

Mi defêndo.

*I defend myself.*

Vi laváte.

*You wash yourselves.*

Si fa onóre.

*She does herself credit.*

Si ôdiano.

*They hate each other.*

Ci amiámo.

*We love one another.*

3. Another conjunctive pronoun is *ne*,<sup>1</sup> of *it*, of *them*; it corresponds also to *any*, *some* when these words mean *any*, *some of it*, *any*, *some of them*. It is often used pleonastically in Italian.

Ne párla.

*He speaks of it.*

Ne ho.

*I have some.*

Non ne abbíamo.

*We haven't any.*

Ne voléte?

*Do you want any?*

Tu ne approfítti di quéstá  
libertà.

*You make good use of this liberty.*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. French *en*.

(a) *Vi*, *you*, and *ci* and *ne*, *us*, are not distinguished by form or position from the adverbs *vi*, *ci*, meaning *there*, *here*, *to it*, *to them*,<sup>1</sup> and the adverb *ne*, *thence* (see 84):<sup>2</sup>

<i>Ci vado.</i>	<i>I go there.</i>
<i>Vi è stato.</i>	<i>He has been there.</i>
<i>Ne vengono.</i>	<i>They come from there.</i>

The adverb *ci* or *vi* is used to express *to it*, *to them*, in speaking of *things*.

<i>Ci penserò.</i>	<i>I shall attend to it.</i>
<i>Mi fa dei gesti, ma non vi rispondo.</i>	<i>He makes signs to me, but I do not reply to them.</i>

48. The conjunctive pronouns, except *loro*, immediately precede the verb:

<i>Mi vedete.</i>	<i>You see me.</i>
<i>Non lo capisco.</i>	<i>I don't understand him.</i>

But when the verb is an infinitive,<sup>3</sup> a positive imperative,<sup>4</sup> a present participle, or a past participle used without an auxiliary, the pronoun follows the verb, and is written as one word with it:<sup>5</sup>

<i>per vederlo, to see him.</i>	<i>di averlo veduto, to have seen him.</i>
<i>vedeteli, see them.</i>	<i>vedendoci, seeing us.</i>
<i>avendoci veduto, having seen us.</i>	<i>vedutoti, having seen thee.</i>

The addition of the pronoun does not change the place of the accent.

*Loro* always follows the verb, but is never united to it.

<i>Egli dà loro del vino.</i>	<i>He gives them some wine.</i>
<i>Parlate loro.</i>	<i>Speak to them.</i>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. French *y*.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. French *en*.

<sup>3</sup> Not the infinitive used — with a negative — as imperative (see 72): as *non lo fare*, *do not do it* (second pers. sing.).

<sup>4</sup> Not the negative imperative, nor the subjunctive used imperatively (see 77, a): as *non li guardate*, *do not look at them*; *si regoli*, *let him moderate himself* (third pers. sing. pres. subj.).

<sup>5</sup> Students should follow strictly all of these rules; but they will find that the first is, in certain cases, not always observed by good Italian writers. In literary style a pronoun often follows a verb that begins a sentence: as *vedolo venire*, *I see him coming*

(a) When an infinitive depends immediately (without an intervening preposition) on another verb, a conjunctive pronoun belonging to the infinitive may go with either verb:

Pôso vedérte *or* ti pôso *I can see thee.*  
vedére.

(NEVER: pôso ti vedére)

A reflexive pronoun oftenest goes with the main verb.

Si dêve corrêggere. *He must correct himself.*

If both verbs have objects, the main verb regularly takes all conjunctive pronouns:

Ve lo sêto dîre. *I hear you say it.*  
Me lo fa capîre. *He makes me understand it.*

If, however, the main verb is impersonal, it cannot take the object of the infinitive:

Bisógna fârlô. *It is necessary to do it.*

If the main verb is *fâre*, *lasciâre*, *sentîre*, *udîre*, or *vedére*, it must take the pronoun:

Lo fa chiamâre. *He has him called.*

(b) If the main verb is *fâre*, and the dependent infinitive has a direct object, the object of *fâre*, if it has one, must be indirect:

Le fa avére la lèttera. *He lets her have the letter.*  
Fâteli vedére a quel signóre. *Let that gentleman see them.*  
Dovrêi fârglielo accettâre. *I ought to make him accept it.*

This construction is generally used also with *lasciâre*, *to let*, and often with *sentîre* and *udîre*, *to hear*, and *vedére*, *to see*. Note that the main verb takes all conjunctive pronouns.

Gliélo védo dâre. *I see it given him.*

(c) When a conjunctive pronoun is joined to an infinitive, the infinitive drops its final *e*; if it ends in *-rre*, it drops *-re*:

fârlô (*fâre*), *to do it*. *condúrvi* (*condúrre*), *to conduct you*

(d) The final vowel of *mi*, *ti*, *si* is often, and that of *lo*, *la* is nearly always elided before a verb beginning with a vowel:

T' ámo.	<i>I love thee.</i>
L' ho visto.	<i>I've seen him.</i>

(e) All conjunctive pronouns except *gli* and *glie* (see 50) double their initial consonant when added to any form of a verb that ends in an accented vowel:

Dám <sup>mi</sup> ( <i>imper. da' from dáre</i> ).	<i>Give me.</i>
Parleró <sup>lle</sup> ( <i>antique, for le parlerò</i> ).	<i>I shall speak to her.</i>
Dí <sup>llo</sup> ( <i>imper. di' from díre</i> ).	<i>Say it.</i>

(f) Pronouns are joined to the interjection *ecco*, *see here*, just as they are joined to the imperative of a verb:

Éccomi.	<i>Here I am.</i>
Éccotelo pronto.	<i>Here it is ready for thee.</i>

49. When two conjunctive pronouns come together, the indirect object precedes the direct:

Mi vi presé <sup>ta</sup> .	<i>He introduces you to me.</i>
Non vuó <sup>l</sup> presentárvimi.	<i>He will not introduce me to you.</i>
Gli si presentò un uó <sup>mo</sup> .	<i>A man presented himself to him.</i>

But see 55, end.

Lóro, however, always comes last:

Presentátela lóro.	<i>Introduce her to them.</i>
--------------------	-------------------------------

Ne follows all forms except lóro:

Me ne dà.	<i>He gives me some.</i>
Dátene lóro.	<i>Give them some.</i>

50. *Mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *si* change their *i* to *e* before *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne* (pronoun or adverb); and if the two words follow the verb, they are joined together:<sup>1</sup>

Me lo díce.	<i>He tells me it.</i>
Ve ne domá <sup>ndo</sup> .	<i>I ask you for some.</i>
Mandátecelo.	<i>Send it to us.</i>

<sup>1</sup> In poetry *me lo*, *me ne*, etc., often become *mel*, *men*, etc.: as *tel díco*, *I tell thee*; *zeu tórna*, *he returns thence*. *Non lo* often = *no*.



Gli and le (*to her*) become glie before lo, la, li, le, ne, and unite with them:

Gliélli mándo.  
Vóglío dárglielo.

*I send them to him, to her.*  
*I wish to give it to him, to her.*

## DISJUNCTIVE FORMS

51. These forms are so called because they do not necessarily stand next to the verb.

Disjunctive pronouns have two cases, nominative and objective (or accusative). The objective case is used only after prepositions (for exceptions, see 51, a, b).

The disjunctive forms are these:

io, <i>I; me, me.</i>	tu, <i>thou; te, thee.</i>
nói, <i>we; noi, us.</i>	vói, <i>you; vói, you.</i>
{ égli, lúi, éssó, <i>he; lúi, éssó, him.</i>	
{ élla, lêi, éssa, <i>she; lêi, éssa, her.</i>	
{ éssi, lóro, <i>they (masc.); lóro, éssi, them (masc.).</i>	
{ ésse, lóro, <i>they (fem.); lóro, ésse, them (fem.).</i>	

*It* must be rendered by a masculine or feminine form, according to the gender of the noun it represents. *It* as subject of an impersonal verb is regularly not expressed (see, however, 51, h).

La casa è grandíssima, e intorno ad éssa c'è un giardino.	<i>The house is very large, and around it there is a garden.</i>
Non è véro.	<i>It isn't true.</i>
Piòve.	<i>It rains.</i>

1. The various pronouns of the third person are used as follows. In speaking of *things* the different forms of éssó are generally employed.

In speaking of *persons* égli (or éssó), élla (or éssa), pl. éssi, ésse are used for the nominative in written Italian,<sup>1</sup> but in the spoken

<sup>1</sup> Italian formerly possessed also masc. églino, fem. élleno, *they*, for persons; likewise pl. égli (or éi) and élle.

language they are replaced by *lúi, lêi, lóro*. For the objective, *lúi, lêi, lóro* (sometimes *éssu, éssa, éssi, ésse*) are used both in conversation and in writing.

For *he who*, etc., see 42, *b*.

Quéste còse sòno vére anch' *ésse*.

*These things are true, too.*

Élla párla con *lóro*.

*She speaks with them.*

Lêi è giòvane ma *lúi* è vécchio.

*She is young, but he is old.*

Vénnero da nòi anch' *éssi*.

*They came to us, too.*

2. As the Italian verb denotes by its endings the person and number of its subject, the personal pronouns of the nominative case are generally omitted. When expressed (for clearness, emphasis, or euphony), they may precede or follow the verb; independent clauses they nearly always follow. The subject of an interrogative verb usually comes after it, as in English.

Parliámo di *lúi*.

*We speak of him.*

Non vádo.

*I don't go.*

S' ío fóssi rícco cóme è *égli*.

*If I were rich as he is.*

Véngono *éssi*?

*Are they coming?*

3. The disjunctive reflexive pronoun of the third person is *sè*, which is masculine and feminine, singular and plural.

Lo févero da *sè*.

*They did it by themselves.*

In the other persons *me, nòi, te, vói* are used.

(a) Use the objective case and not, as in English, the nominative:

(1) When a pronoun of the third person may be regarded as the subject of an unexpressed verb:

Beáto *lúi*!

*Happy he!*

Tánto i genitóri che *lúi* sòno rícchi.

*His parents as well as he are rich.*

(2) When the pronoun stands in the predicate after the verb *sere*:

Credêndo ch' ío fóssi *te*.

*Thinking I was you.*

But note carefully that *it is I*, etc., are *sòno ío, sêi tu, è lúi, è l, slámo nòi, siête vói, sòno lóro*.

(b) (1) When the pronoun is at all emphatic, the *disjunctive* form *must* be used. In this case the conjunctive form is often inserted also.

Párlo a vói signóre.	<i>I speak to you, sir.</i>
Mí piáce ánche a me.	<i>It pleases me too.</i>

## BUT

Vi páro.	<i>I speak to you.</i>
Mí piáce.	<i>It pleases me.</i>

(2) The disjunctive form must therefore *always* be used when the verb has two direct or two indirect objects.

Védo lúi e lèi.	<i>I see him and her.</i>
Lo do a mío pádre e a te.	<i>I give it to my father and to thee.</i>

(c) In speaking of a company, a class, or a people *nói áltri*, *vói áltri* (which are also written as one word) are used for *nói*, *vói*.

Nói áltri italiáni.	<i>We Italians.</i>
Vói áltri pittóri.	<i>You painters.</i>

(d) *With me, with thee, with himself, herself, themselves* are either *con me*, etc., or *méco*, *téco*, *séco*.

(e) *Myself, thyself, etc.*, used for emphasis with a pronoun or noun, are rendered by the adjective *stéssu*.

Nói stéssi la vedémmo.	<i>We saw her ourselves.</i>
------------------------	------------------------------

(f) *One another, each other* is *l' un l' áltro*.

Ci amiámo l' un l' áltro.	<i>We love one another.</i>
---------------------------	-----------------------------

(g) In Florence *élla* is often shortened into *la* (plural *le*), which is used of both persons and things. In poetry *égli* becomes *éi*.

La non viðene.	<i>She doesn't come.</i>
Páre che la si' pòssa tenér in máno.	<i>It looks as if it might be held in the hand.</i>
Éi táce.	<i>He is silent.</i>

(h) In impersonal phrases like *it is* the subject, *it*, is occasionally expressed in Italian; it is then translated *égli*, which in the spoken language is shortened into *gli*.

Gli è che.	<i>It is because.</i>
------------	-----------------------

52. 1. The usual form of address in Italy is *Élla*<sup>1</sup> (or *élla*), subjective *Lêi* (or *lêi*); in conversation *Élla* is replaced by *lei* (or *lêi*). This word really means *it*, and takes the verb in the third person; but an adjective or past participle modifying it agrees in gender with the person it represents. The plural of *Élla* is *Lóro* (or *lóro*), which takes the verb in the third person plural.

The use of the capital initial in all these words is optional. It marks respect, and is sometimes useful to distinguish *you* from *she*.

<i>Lêi or Élla è tedésco, signóre.</i>	<i>You are German, sir.</i>
<i>Signorína Néri, Lêi or Élla fu lasciáta sóla.</i>	<i>Miss Neri, you were left alone.</i>
<i>Sóno liêto che La stía bène</i> (see 51, g).	<i>I'm glad you are well.</i>
<i>E Lóro, dóve vánno?</i>	<i>And you, where are you going?</i>
<i>Lóro érano già partíti.</i>	<i>You were already gone.</i>
<i>Signoríne, lóro sóno móltó studióse.</i>	<i>Young ladies, you are very studious.</i>

Like other personal pronouns, *Élla* and *Lóro* are very often omitted in the nominative.

<i>Lêi è trôppo gentile or è trôppo gentíle.</i>	<i>You are too kind.</i>
<i>Cóme stánno?</i>	<i>How do you (pl.) do?</i>

The conjunctive forms of *Élla* are *La*, *Le* (or *la*, *le*), those of *Lóro* are *Li*, *Le*, *Lóro* (or *li*, *le*, *lóro*); they occupy the same positions and undergo the same modifications as the corresponding pronouns of the third person (see 48, 49, 50).

Note that regularly in the singular the same pronoun is used, whether one is addressing a man or a woman; although occasionally *lo*, *gli* are substituted for *la*, *le* in speaking to a

<sup>1</sup> Standing for *Vôstra Signoríza*, *your lordship*, or *ladyship*, or some other title of the feminine gender.

male. In the *plural*, however, if the pronoun be a direct object, the sexes are regularly distinguished.

The reflexive pronoun of *Élla* and *Lóro* is *si*.

Le prométto di visitarla.	<i>I promise (you) to visit you.</i>
Gliélo do.	<i>I give it to you.</i>
La prêgo d' accomodarsi.	<i>I beg you to seat yourself.</i>
Vidi Lêi e il bábbò.	<i>I saw you and your father (see 51, b, 2).</i>
Dico lóro.	<i>I tell you (pl.).</i>
Le cercáva.	<i>I was looking for you (fem. pl.).</i>
Non pôsso vedérli.	<i>I can't see you (masc. pl.).</i>
Si divêrtono, signorini?	<i>Are you enjoying yourselves, young gentlemen?</i>

The possessive of *Élla* is *Súo* (or *súo*); that of *Lóro* is *Lóro* (or *lóro*). See 45.

La Súa gradíta lèttera.	<i>Your welcome letter.</i>
-------------------------	-----------------------------

2. *Vói* is the form of address oftenest found in books; it is used sometimes in conversation also, but only toward inferiors or toward equals with whom one is on familiar terms. It is employed for both plural and singular (like English *you*), although its verb is always plural; an adjective or participle modifying it agrees in gender and number with the person or persons it represents.

Vói qui, Piétro?	<i>You here, Peter?</i>
Vói siête álti tútti e dúe.	<i>You are tall, both of you.</i>

3. In speaking to an intimate friend, a near relative, a child, or an animal, the only form of address is *tu*. *Tu* is used also, like English *thou*, in poetry and poetic prose. The plural of *tu* is *vói*.

Ti chiámo Enríco.	<i>I call you Henry.</i>
Dóve sêi tu?	<i>Where art thou?</i>
Vôglio vedérvi, figliuôli miêi.	<i>My children, I wish to see you.</i>

<sup>1</sup> Though advocated by some of the best writers and speakers of Italian, the use of *vói* instead of *Lêi* and *Lóro* has not become general. In Southern Italy, however, *vói* is the form popularly used.



# AUXILIARY VERBS

53. The irregular verbs *èssere*, *to be*, and *avére*, *to have*, are the ones most used as auxiliaries in Italian. They are conjugated as follows:

a) INFINITIVES: *èssere*, *to be*; *èssere státo*, *to have been*.

PARTICIPLES: *essêdo*, *being*; *essêdo státo*, *having been*; *státo*, *been*.

## INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
<i>am, etc.</i>	<i>I was, etc.</i>	<i>I was, etc.</i>	<i>I shall be, etc.</i>
sôno	êra	fúi	sarò
sêi	êri	fôsti	sarâi
è	êra	fu	sarà
siâmo	eravâmo	fúmmo	sarémo
siête	eravâte	fôste	sarête
sôno	êrano	fúrono	sarânno

PRESENT PERFECT	PAST PERFECT	SECOND PAST PERFECT	FUTURE PERFECT
<i>have been, etc.</i>	<i>I had been, etc.</i>	<i>I had been, etc.</i>	<i>I shall have been, etc.</i>
sôno státo (státa) etc.	êra státo (státa) etc.	fúi státo (státa) etc.	sarò státo (státa) etc.
siâmo stâti (stâte) etc.	eravâmo stâti (stâte) etc.	fúmmo stâti (stâte) etc.	sarémo stâti (stâte) etc.

IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
<i>Be, etc.</i>	PRESENT	PAST	<i>I should be, etc.</i>
	<i>I be, etc.</i>	<i>I were, etc.</i>	
sii or sia	sia	fôssi	sarêi
	sia	fôssi	sarêsti
	sia	fôsse	sarêbbe
siâmo	siâmo	fôssimo	sarémmo
siâte	siâte	fôste	sarêste
	siano or sieno	fôssero	sarêbbero

SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
PRESENT	PAST	PERFECT
PERFECT	PERFECT	<i>I should have</i>
<i>I have been, etc.</i>	<i>I had been, etc.</i>	<i>been, etc.</i>
sía státo (státa)	fóssi státo (státa)	sarèi státo
etc.	etc.	(státa) etc.

(b) INFINITIVES: *avére, to have; avére avúto, to have had.*

PARTICIPLES: *avêndo, having; avêndo avúto, having had; avúto, had.*

## INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
<i>I have, etc.</i>	<i>I had, etc.</i>	<i>I had, etc.</i>	<i>I shall have, etc.</i>
hò	avéva	èbbi	avrò
hái	avévi	avésti	avràí
ha	avéva	èbbe	avrà
abbiamo	avevamo	avémmo	avrèmo
avéte	avevate	avéste	avréte
hanno	avévano	ebbero	avranno
PRESENT	PAST	SECOND PAST	FUTURE
PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT
<i>I have had, etc.</i>	<i>I had had, etc.</i>	<i>I had had, etc.</i>	<i>I shall have had, etc.</i>
ho avúto	avéva avúto	èbbi avúto	avrò avúto
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

## IMPERATIVE

## SUBJUNCTIVE

## PAST FUTURE

<i>Have, etc.</i>	PRESENT	PAST	<i>I should have, etc.</i>
	<i>I have, etc.</i>	<i>I had, etc.</i>	
ábbi	abbia	avéssi	avrèi
	abbí or ábbia	avéssi	avrèsti
	abbia	avéssse	avrèbbe
abbiamo	abbiamo	avéssimo	avrémmo
abbiate	abbiate	avéste	avréste
	abbiano	avéssero	avrèbbero
	PRESENT	PAST	PAST FUTURE
	PERFECT	PERFECT	PERFECT
	<i>I have had, etc.</i>	<i>I had had, etc.</i>	<i>I should have had, etc.</i>
	abbia avúto	avéssi avúto	avrèi avúto
	etc.	etc.	etc.

54. 1. The auxiliary of the passive is *èssere*, *to be*.

L' esèrcito fu sconfitto.

*The army was defeated.*

2. The future (*shall*, *will*) and the past future or conditional (*should*, *would*) are formed in Italian without any auxiliary.

Io andrò ed ógli verrà.

*I shall go, and he will come.*

Vorrèi vedérlo.

*I should like to see him.*

3. The auxiliary of the perfect, past perfect, second past perfect, and future perfect tenses is *avére*, *to have*, if the verb be active and transitive.

If the verb be passive, reflexive, or reciprocal, the auxiliary is always *èssere*. For the definition of a reflexive verb, see 17, 2, on p. 36.

If the verb be intransitive, the auxiliary is generally *èssere*, but sometimes *avére*.<sup>1</sup>

Ho parlato.

*I have spoken.*

Avévano fáttö quèste còse.

*They had done these things.*

Mi sóno fáttö mále.

*I have hurt myself.*

Le dónne si érano sbagliáte.

*The women had made a mistake.*

Sarò venúto.

*I shall have come.*

È nevicáto.

*It has snowed.*

Avéva viaggiáto.

*He had traveled.*

(a) A past participle used with the auxiliary *èssere* must agree with its *subject* in gender and number.

La ragázza è tornáta.

*The girl has returned.*

Le dónne si sóno disputáte.

*The women have disputed.*

But when the verb has a reflexive pronoun as *indirect* object, and some other word as *direct* object, the past participle may agree with the subject, or with the direct object, or remain invariable.

La sorèlla si è fáтта mále.

*Our sister has hurt herself.*

Ci siámo fátti onóre.

*We have done ourselves credit.*

Ci siámo dáta (or dáto) paróla  
d' onóre.

*We have pledged our word of honor.*

<sup>1</sup> The use of *avére* with intransitive verbs must be learned by practice.

(b) A past participle used with *avére* may or may not agree with its *direct object*, according to the choice of the writer. It usually does not agree when the object follows; and it nearly always does agree when the object is a personal pronoun preceding the verb.

La bírra che avéva bevúto (or bevúta).	<i>The beer he had drunk.</i>
Ho vedúto mólte còse.	<i>I have seen many things.</i>
Lì ho trováti.	<i>I have found them.</i>

(c) *To be*, expressing a state or condition, is often rendered by *stáre* (92, 4), instead of *èssere*. *Stáre per* or *èssere per* (followed by the infinitive) means *to be on the point of*.

Sto béne.	<i>I'm well.</i>
Cóme sta?	<i>How are you?</i>
Stáva per uscíre.	<i>I was just going out.</i>

(d) English *am* (or *was*) + the present participle, when expressing duration, is rendered either by the simple present (or past descriptive) or by the same tense of *stáre*<sup>1</sup> + the present participle; when denoting futurity, it is translated by the future (or past future), sometimes by the present (or past descriptive).

Cammináva.	<i>He was walking.</i>
Státe lavorádo.	<i>You are working.</i>
Leggévano or stávano leggêdo.	<i>They were reading.</i>
Mêdito or sto meditádo.	<i>I am meditating.</i>
Díce che verrà (or viðene).	<i>He says he is coming.</i>
Disse che verrêbbe.	<i>He said he was coming.</i>

(e) A verb with the auxiliary *used to* (or *would=used to*) is translated either by the simple past descriptive, or by the infinitive with *solére*, *to be accustomed* (92, 14).

Vi andáva (or soléva andáre) ógni séra.	<i>He used to go (or would go) there every evening.</i>
--	---

(f) *Veníre*, *to come* (92, 166), and *rimanére*, *to remain* (92, 16) are sometimes used as auxiliaries in the simple tenses of the passive

<sup>1</sup> *Andáre* (92, 1) and *veníre* (92, 166) are sometimes used instead of *stáre*.

instead of *essere*. *Andáre*, to go (92, 1), is similarly used, but always implying duty or obligation.

I ládri vénnero arrestáti.	<i>The thieves were arrested.</i>
Rimáse sorpréa.	<i>She was surprised.</i>
Il fucíle non va toccáto.	<i>The gun mustn't be touched.</i>

(g) The English auxiliary *do* is not expressed in Italian.

Non viðene.	<i>He does not come.</i>
-------------	--------------------------

(h) *To have a thing done* is far *fáre úna còsa* (92, 2).

Il re lo féce ammazzáre.	<i>The king had him killed.</i>
--------------------------	---------------------------------

55. The third person of the passive is very often replaced by the reflexive construction with *si*:

Si raccontá.	<i>It is related.</i>
Quésto líbro si lègge.	<i>This book is read.</i>
La spáda che mi si diéde.	<i>The sword that was given me.</i>
Quélle còse si facévano.	<i>Those things were done.</i>

Many writers always make the verb agree with its subject in number; but in popular speech the verb is nearly always in the singular when its subject follows (as if *si* were the subject of the verb, and the original subject were the object):

Si védono (or véde) moltís-sime còse.	<i>Many things are seen.</i>
Non si può (or pòssono) lèggere quésti líbri.	<i>These books can't be read.</i>

*Si* belonging to a dependent infinitive regularly goes with the main verb (see 48, a).

The construction with *si* is generally used also to render the English indefinite *they* followed by a verb: as *si díce*, *they say*. In this sense it is employed with neuter as well as with transitive verbs: as *si va spéssso*, *people often go*. See also 63, a. In this construction an object pronoun may precede *si*: as *lo si fa*, *it is done*.



56. Following are synopses of the compound tenses of transitive, neuter, reflexive, and passive verbs. In the paradigms given henceforth these forms will be omitted.

(a) Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *trovare*, *to find*, and *venire*, *to come*:

avere trovato, <i>to have found.</i>	essere venuto, <i>to have come.</i>
avendo trovato, <i>having found.</i>	essendo venuto, <i>having come.</i>
ho trovato, <i>I have found.</i>	sono venuto, <i>I have come.</i>
aveva trovato, <i>I had found.</i>	era venuto, <i>I had come.</i>
ebbi trovato, <i>I had found.</i>	fui venuto, <i>I had come.</i>
avrò trovato, <i>I shall have found.</i>	sarò venuto, <i>I shall have come.</i>
avrei trovato, <i>I should have found.</i>	sarei venuto, <i>I should have come.</i>
abbia trovato, <i>I have found.</i>	sia venuto, <i>I have come.</i>
avessi trovato, <i>I had found.</i>	fossi venuto, <i>I had come.</i>

(b) Following is a synopsis of the compound tenses of *alzarsi*, *(to raise one's self)*, *to get up*, and *andarsene*,<sup>1</sup> *to go away*.

INFINITIVE: PAST	essersi alzato	essersene andato
PARTICIPLE: PAST	essendosi alzato	essendosi andato
INDICATIVE: PRES. PERF.	mi sono alzato	me ne sono andato
PAST PERFECT	mi era alzato	me ne era andato
SECOND PAST PERFECT	mi fui alzato	me ne fui andato
FUTURE PERFECT	mi sarò alzato	me ne sarò andato
PAST FUTURE: PERFECT	mi sarei alzato	me ne sarei andato
SUBJUNCTIVE: PRES. PERF.	mi sia alzato	me ne sia andato
PAST PERFECT	mi fossi alzato	me ne fossi andato

(c) Following is a synopsis of the entire passive of *amare*, *to love*:

INFINITIVE: PRESENT	essere amato, <i>to be loved.</i>
PAST	essere stato amato, <i>to have been loved.</i>
PARTICIPLE: PRESENT	essendo amato, <i>being loved.</i>
PAST	essendo stato amato, <i>having been loved.</i>
INDICATIVE: PRESENT	sono amato, <i>I am loved.</i>
PRESENT PERFECT	sono stato amato, <i>I have been loved.</i>
PAST DESCRIPTIVE	era amato, <i>I was loved.</i>
PAST PERFECT	era stato amato, <i>I had been loved.</i>
PAST ABSOLUTE	fui amato, <i>I was loved.</i>
SECOND PAST PERFECT	fui stato amato, <i>I had been loved.</i>

<sup>1</sup> Andarsene is composed of the verb *andare*, *to go*, the reflexive *si*, and the adverb *ne*, *thence* (see 47, a).

FUTURE	sarò amáto, <i>I shall be loved.</i>
FUTURE PERFECT	sarò státo amáto, <i>I shall have been loved.</i>
PAST FUTURE	sarèi amáto, <i>I should be loved.</i>
PERFECT	sarèi státo amáto, <i>I should have been loved.</i>
IMPERATIVE	sii amáto, <i>be loved.</i>
SUBJUNCTIVE: PRESENT	sía amáto, <i>I be loved.</i>
PRESENT PERFECT	sía státo amáto, <i>I have been loved.</i>
PAST	fóssi amáto, <i>I were loved.</i>
PAST PERFECT	fóssi státo amáto, <i>I had been loved.</i>

57. *May, might, can, could* are generally rendered by the proper tense of *potére*<sup>1</sup>; *must, ought, shall* = *must, should* = *ought*, by *dovére*<sup>1</sup>; *will and would* expressing volition, by *volére*.<sup>1</sup>

Può essere véro.	<i>It may be true.</i>
Non potéva parláre.	<i>He couldn't speak.</i>
Dève pagárló.	<i>He must pay him, he shall pay him.</i>
Dovrébbe fárló.	<i>He ought to do it, he should do it.</i>
Voglio sapére.	<i>I will know.</i>
Non vorréi andáre.	<i>I wouldn't go.</i>

Note that *ought* must be expressed by the *past future* (or *conditional*) of *dovére*.

Dovrémmo parláre.	<i>We ought to speak.</i>
Avréi dovúto fárló.	<i>I ought to have done it.</i>

No preposition intervenes between these verbs and the dependent infinitive.

Hánno potúto dormíre.	<i>They have been able to sleep.</i>
Potrémó partíre.	<i>We shall be able to start.</i>
Dovémmo veníre.	<i>We had to come.</i>
Dovréte trovárla.	<i>You will have to find her.</i>
Vorrà tornáre.	<i>He will want to return.</i>
Vorrèi sapére.	<i>I should like to know.</i>

These verbs are not defective, like the English modal auxiliaries; hence in Italian the tense is expressed by the

<sup>1</sup> See 92, 21, 8, 19. The auxiliary of these verbs is regularly *avére*; but some writers use with them the auxiliary that belongs to the dependent infinitive: as *hánno potúto veníre* or *sóno potúti veníre*, *they have been able to come*.

auxiliary itself, and not by the dependent infinitive. To find the proper form of *potére*, *dovére*, or *volére*, replace *may*, etc., by the correct tense of *to be able*; *must*, etc., by *to be obliged*; *will*, etc., by *to want* or *to like*: as *I could have said it*=*I should have* (*avrêi*) *been able* (*potúto*) *to say it* (*dírlo*)=*avrêi potúto dírlo*.

Avrêbbe dovúto tacére.  
Avrémmo volúto restáre.

*He ought to have kept still.*  
*We would have stayed.*

(a) *Must* is also expressed by the impersonal verb *bisognáre*, *to be necessary*, followed by the infinitive or by *che*, *that*, with the subjunctive. *To have to* is *avére da*.

Bisógna fárló.  
Bisógna che andiámo.  
Ho da scrívere úna lèttera.

*It must be done.*  
*We must go.*  
*I have to write a letter.*

(b) *To be able* meaning *to know how* is *sapére* (see 92, 6). . *Not to be able to help* doing a thing is *non potér a méno di non* (with infinitive) or *non potér fáre a méno di* (with infinitive).

Non sêppe fárló.  
Sa lèggere e scrívere.  
Non potè a méno di non rídere.

*He couldn't do it.*  
*He can read and write.*  
*He couldn't help laughing.*

## REGULAR AND IRREGULAR VERBS

58. Italian verbs are divided into four conjugations, according as the infinitive ending is *-áre*, accented *-ére*, unaccented *-ere* (or *-rre*), or *-íre*. Regular verbs of the second and third conjugations are, however, inflected just alike.

(a) The final *e* of the infinitive may be dropped before any word except one beginning with *s* impure.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 10, b; 14, b. Italians find it hard to pronounce three consecutive consonants of which the middle one is *s*.


## THE REGULAR VERB

59. *Parlâre*, to speak, will serve as a model for the first conjugation. All compound tenses are omitted (see 56):

## INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

*parlâre*                      *parlândo*                      *parlâto*

## INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
<i>pârlo</i>	<i>parlâva</i> 	<i>parlâi</i>	<i>parlerò</i>
<i>pârli</i>	<i>parlâvi</i>	<i>parlâsti</i>	<i>parlerâi</i>
<i>pârla</i>	<i>parlâva</i>	<i>parlò</i>	<i>parlerà</i>
<i>parliâmo</i>	<i>parlavâmo</i>	<i>parlâmmo</i>	<i>parlerêmo</i>
<i>parlâte</i>	<i>parlavâte</i>	<i>parlâte</i>	<i>parlerête</i>
<i>pârlano</i>	<i>parlâvano</i>	<i>parlârono</i>	<i>parlerânno</i>

IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
	PRESENT	PAST	
	<i>pârli</i>	<i>parlâssi</i>	<i>parlerêi</i>
<i>pârla</i>	<i>pârli</i>	<i>parlâssi</i>	<i>parlerêsti</i>
	<i>pârli</i>	<i>parlâsse</i>	<i>parlerêbbe</i>
<i>parliâmo</i>	<i>parliâmo</i>	<i>parlâssimo</i>	<i>parlerêmmo</i>
<i>parlâte</i>	<i>parlâte</i>	<i>parlâte</i>	<i>parlerête</i>
	<i>pârlino</i>	<i>parlâssero</i>	<i>parlerêbbero</i>

(a) Verbs whose infinitives end in *-care* or *-gare* insert *h* after the *c* or *g* in all forms where those letters precede *e* or *i*:

<i>Pâghi</i> ( <i>pagâre</i> ).	<i>Let him pay.</i>
<i>Cercherò</i> ( <i>cercâre</i> ).	<i>I shall search.</i>

Verbs in *-ciare* and *-giare* drop the *i* before *e* or *i*:

<i>Mangi</i> ( <i>mangiâre</i> ).	<i>Thou eatest.</i>
<i>Comincerà</i> <sup>1</sup> ( <i>cominciâre</i> ).	<i>He will begin.</i>

But all other verbs in *-iare* drop the *i* only before another *i*:

<i>Picchi</i> ( <i>picchiâre</i> ).	<i>Let him strike.</i>
<i>Pigli</i> ( <i>piigliâre</i> ).	<i>Thou takest.</i>

## BUT

<i>Picchierà</i> , <i>pighliêrêi</i> .	<i>He will strike, I should take.</i>
--	---------------------------------------

<sup>1</sup> Some writers retain the *i* before *e*: as *comincierà*.

(b) The verbs *giocáre*, *rotáre*, *sonáre* generally change o of the stem into uo in all forms where that vowel is accented:

*Suóni.*

*Let him play.*

*Giudecano.*

*They play.*

*Rinnováre* and *tonáre* may make the same change. The u is sometimes used throughout.

60. Verbs of the second and third conjugations<sup>1</sup> are inflected like *credére*, *to believe*:

#### INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

*credére*

*credéndo*

*credúto*

#### INDICATIVE

PRESENT PAST DESCRIPTIVE

PAST ABSOLUTE

FUTURE

*crédo*

*credéva*

*credéi (credétti)*

*crederò*

*crédi*

*credévi*

*credésti*

*crederai*

*créde*

*credéva*

*credè (credétte)*

*crederà*

*crediamo*

*credevamo*

*credemmo*

*crederemo*

*credéte*

*credevate*

*credéste*

*crederete*

*credono*

*credevano*

*credérono (credéttero)*

*crederanno*

#### IMPERATIVE

#### SUBJUNCTIVE

#### PAST FUTURE

PRESENT

PAST

*créda*

*credéssi*

*crederèi*

*crédi*

*créda*

*credéssi*

*crederésti*

*créda*

*credésse*

*crederèbbe*

*crediamo*

*crediamo*

*credéssimo*

*crederémmo*

*credéte*

*crediate*

*credéste*

*crederéste*

*crédano*

*credéssero*

*crederèbbero*

The following verbs and their compounds do not have in the past absolute the forms in parentheses:

*battere*

*méscere*

*stridere*

*compêtere*

*miêtere*

*têssere*

*convêgere*

*pâscere*

*tôndere*

*divêgere*

*prûdere*

*lúcere*

*ripêtere*

<sup>1</sup> Many grammars and dictionaries class these two together as the "second conjugation."



Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert after the *c* or *g* an *i* before the *u* of the past participle, but not before the *o* or *a* of the singular or third person plural of the present indicative or subjunctive:

*méscere*; *mésco*, *mésci*, *mésce*, *mesciâmo*, *mescête*, *méscono*; *mésca*, etc. *méscano*; *mesciúto*.

61. Most verbs of the fourth conjugation<sup>1</sup> are inflected like *finíre*, to *finish*:

## INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

*finíre*                      *finêndo*                      *finíto*

## INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
<i>finísco</i>	<i>finíva</i>	<i>finíi</i>	<i>finirò</i>
<i>finísci</i>	<i>finívi</i>	<i>finísti</i>	<i>finirài</i>
<i>finísce</i>	<i>finíva</i>	<i>finí</i>	<i>finirà</i>
<i>finiâmo</i>	<i>finivâmo</i>	<i>finímmo</i>	<i>finirêmo</i>
<i>finíte</i>	<i>finiváte</i>	<i>finíste</i>	<i>finiréte</i>
<i>finíscono</i>	<i>finívano</i>	<i>finírono</i>	<i>finirânno</i>

IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE		PAST FUTURE
	PRESENT	PAST	
	<i>finísca</i>	<i>finíssi</i>	<i>finirêi</i>
<i>finísci</i>	<i>finísca</i>	<i>finíssi</i>	<i>finirêsti</i>
	<i>finísca</i>	<i>finísse</i>	<i>finirêbbe</i>
<i>finiâmo</i>	<i>finiâmo</i>	<i>finíssimo</i>	<i>finirêmmo</i>
<i>finíte</i>	<i>finiáte</i>	<i>finíste</i>	<i>finirêste</i>
	<i>finíscano</i>	<i>finíssero</i>	<i>finirêbbero</i>

Though inflected like *finíre* in all other parts, *dormíre*, *fuggíre*,<sup>2</sup> *pentíre*, *sentíre*, *servíre*, *vestíre* are always, *aborríre*, *bollíre*, and verbs in *-vertíre* are generally, and *assorbíre*, *inghiottíre*, *mentíre*, *nutríre*, *tossíre* are often, in the present indicative, imperative, and subjunctive, conjugated

<sup>1</sup> Many grammars and dictionaries call this the "third conjugation."

<sup>2</sup> *Fuggíre* inserts no extra *i* (see last sentence of 60).

after the model below. *Partíre* and *sortíre* are, when transitive, inflected like *finíre*, when intransitive, like *sentíre*.<sup>1</sup>

INDICATIVE	IMPERATIVE	SUBJUNCTIVE
sênto		sênta
sênti	sênti	sênta
sênte		sênta
sentiámo	sentiámo	sentiámo
sentíte	sentíte	sentiáte
sêntono		sêntano

62. The present participle of all verbs is invariable.

Stavámo parlándo.

*We were speaking.*

63. In all conjugations a form of the first person singular of the past descriptive ending in *-o* instead of *-a* is nearly always used in conversation, and occurs often in the works of modern authors:

Leggévo.

*I was reading.*

(a) In popular speech the first person plural of all tenses is generally replaced by the third person singular preceded by *si*:

Nói álti si crede.

*We believe.*

Nói si êra venúti.

*We had come.*

Ci si decíse.

*We decided (ourselves).*

(b) Final *o* of the third person plural is frequently omitted:

Párlan di lúi.

*They speak of him.*

Forms in *-ánno* sometimes drop *-no*:

Dirán tútto.

*They will tell everything.*

(c) The past descriptive endings *-avámo*, *-aváte*, *-evámo*, *-eváte*, *-ivámo*, *-iváte* are often pronounced *-ávamo*, *-ávate*, etc.

(d) Occasionally, especially in poetry, *-at-* is omitted from the ending of the past participle of the first conjugation: *destáto* - *désto*.

<sup>1</sup> Compounds are conjugated like their simple verbs.

## THE IRREGULAR VERB

64. Certain parts of Italian irregular verbs are always regular: the example given below will show which they are. *Èssere* (see 53, *a*) is an exception to all rules.

65. Many irregular verbs that belong or once belonged to the third conjugation have the infinitive contracted (*fàre* for *fàcere*, *dìre* for *dìcere*, *condúrre* for *condúcere*): in this case the future and past future are formed from this contracted infinitive (*farò*, *dirèi*, *condurrèbbe*), while the present participle, the past descriptive and past subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and past absolute are formed from the uncontracted stem (*facèndo*, *dicéva*, *conluciámo*).

66. *Pórre* (for *pónere*), *to put*, a verb of the third conjugation, will serve to show which are the regular and which the irregular parts of irregular verbs: the forms printed in boldface are regular in all verbs except *dàre*, *dìre*, *èssere*, *fàre*, *stàre*; those in Roman type may be irregular.

## INFINITIVE AND PARTICIPLES

*pórre*                      *ponéndo*                      *pósto*

## INDICATIVE

PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE	FUTURE
<i>póngo</i>	<i>ponéva</i>	<i>pósi</i>	<i>porrò</i>
<i>póni</i>	<i>ponévi</i>	<i>ponésti</i> <sup>1</sup>	<i>porrái</i>
<i>póne</i>	<i>ponéva</i>	<i>pósc</i>	<i>porrà</i>
<i>poniámo</i>	<i>ponevámo</i>	<i>ponémmo</i> <sup>2</sup>	<i>porrémo</i>
<i>ponéte</i> <sup>1</sup>	<i>poneváte</i>	<i>ponéste</i> <sup>2</sup>	<i>porréte</i>
<i>póngono</i>	<i>ponévano</i>	<i>póscro</i>	<i>porránno</i>

<sup>1</sup> See 65, 4.

<sup>2</sup> See 66, 3.

## IMPERATIVE

## SUBJUNCTIVE

## PAST FUTUR

	PRESENT	PAST	
póni	póngà	ponéssi <sup>1</sup>	porréi
	póngà	ponéssi	porrésti
	póngà	ponésse	porrèbbe
poniámo	poniámo	ponéssimo	porrémmo
ponéte	poniáte	ponéste	porréste
	póngano	ponéssero	porrèbbero

It will be seen that the present participle, the past descriptive and past subjunctive, and certain persons of the present and past absolute are always regular.

1. *Dáre* and *stáre* have in the future and past future *daré* and *daréi*; *starò*, *staréi*. Otherwise the only irregularity in the future and past future is that they are contracted in many verbs even when the infinitive is uncontracted: as *vedére*, *to see*, *vedrò*, *verréi*; *veníre*, *to come*, *verréi*.

2. From the first person singular of the past absolute the other irregular persons can be constructed, the third person singular by changing the ending *-i* to *-e*, the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular.<sup>2</sup>

3. The *regular* persons of the past absolute and the whole past subjunctive are slightly irregular in *dáre* and *stáre*, which substitute *e* for *a* in those forms (*désti*, *démmo*, *déste*, *déssi*; *stésti*, *stémmo*, *stéste*, *stéssi*).

4. *Díre* (for *dícere*) and *fáre* (for *fácere*) have *díte* and *fáte* for the second person plural of the present indicative.

(a) Verbs whose stem ends in *-l*, *-n*, or *-r* often drop final *e* or *i* in the singular of the present indicative and imperative:

Non vuôl andáre.

*He will not go.*

Viên qui.

*Come here.*

See also 63, *a*, *b*, *c*.

<sup>1</sup> See 66, 3.

<sup>2</sup> This rule applies only to an irregular past absolute.

(b) The three forms of the imperative are exactly like the corresponding persons of the present indicative, except in *avére*, *sapére*, and *volére*, where they follow the subjunctive:

<i>ábbi</i>	<i>abbiámo</i>	<i>abbiáte</i>
<i>sáppi</i>	<i>sappiámo</i>	<i>sappiáte</i>
<i>vogli</i>	<i>vogliámo</i>	<i>vogliáte</i>

and in *andáre*, *dáre*, *díre*, *fáre*, and *stáre*, which have in the singular *va'*, *da'*, *di'*, *fa'*, *sta'*.

(c) The third person plural of the present indicative can always be constructed from the first person singular, from which can be formed also the whole present subjunctive except the first and second persons plural: these can be made from the first person plural of the present indicative.

EXCEPTIONS to this rule are *andáre*, *avére*, *dáre*, *fáre*, *sapére*, and *stáre*, which have in the third person plural of the present indicative *vanno*, *hanno*, *danno*, *fanno*, *sanno*, *stanno*; while *avére*, *dáre*, *sapére*, and *stáre* have in the present subjunctive *abbia*, *día*, *sappia*, *stia*.

67. With the aid of the above notes any verb except *essere* can be constructed from the infinitive, the participles (the present participle often being necessary to show the uncontracted form of the infinitive), the present indicative, and the first person singular of the past absolute and future. A list of irregular verbs begins on page 80.

(a) In general, compound verbs not differing in conjugation from their simple verbs will be omitted from this list. All compounds of *dáre* and *fáre* are accented on the same syllable as the simple verbs:

<i>Fa.</i>	<i>He does.</i>	<i>Disfà.</i>	<i>He undoes.</i>
------------	-----------------	---------------	-------------------

The compounds of *stáre* demand special mention: *ristáre*, *soprástáre*, *sottostáre*, *sovrapstáre* are inflected like *stáre* (*ristà*, *soprapstètti*, *sottostéfano*); *distáre* has no present participle, is regular in the present of all moods (*dísto*, etc.), but otherwise is inflected



like *stáre* (*distêtti*, etc.); *constáre*, *contrastáre*, *instáre*, *ostáre*, *prestáre*, *restáre*, *sostáre* are regular throughout (*côsta*, *contrástano*, *instái*, *ostárono*, *presterò*, *rêsti*, *sostássi*).

68. In old Italian and in poetry both regular and irregular verbs differ in many ways from the normal types; some of the commonest variations are given below.

(a) In the first and third persons singular and the third person plural of the past descriptive *v* is often dropped, but never in the first conjugation: *voléva*=*voléa* (also *volía*); *finívano*=*finíano*. Some of these forms are not uncommon in modern prose.

(b) The past future endings *-êi*, *-êbbe*, *-êbbero* are generally replaced in poetry by *-ía*, *-íá*, *-íano*: *crederêi*=*credería*.

(c) The future endings *-ò*, *-ánno* are sometimes replaced by *-ággio* or *-ábbo*, *-ággiono* or *-ábbono*: *amerò*=*amerággio*; *ameráanno*=*amerábbono*.

(d) In the third person plural of the past absolute *-no* or *-ono* is often dropped: *amárono*=*amáro* or *amâr* (also *amôrno*, *amônno*). In the third person singular we find *amáo*, *credéo*, *sentío*.

(e) Final *-ero* is often replaced by *-ono*: *avrêbbero*=*avrêbbono*.

(f) In the first person plural final *o* is often dropped, and then the *m* sometimes becomes *n*: *andíamo*=*andíam* or *andíán*.

(g) In the first person plural of the present indicative of the second and third conjugations *-íamo* may be replaced by *-émo*.

(h) Final *-íano*, wherever it occurs (also *-éano* in the imperfect) may be replaced by *-íeno* or *-iêno*: *avévano*=*aviêno*.

(i) At the end of a word we often find *e* for *i*, sometimes *i* for *e*: *pênsi*=*pênsé*; *ascoltáte*=*ascoltátí*.

(j) *E* is sometimes added to a word ending in an accented vowel: *amò*=*amôe*.

## MOODS AND TENSES

69. The English gerund in *-ing* used as subject, predicate nominative, or direct object of a verb must be rendered in Italian by the *infinitive*, nearly always preceded by the definite article.

Mi piáce il viaggiáre.	<i>I like traveling.</i>
Rifársela cógli animáli è da sciòcchi.	<i>Taking vengeance on animals is folly.</i>
La nôstra prima cúra fu il cercáre úna pensióne.	<i>Our first care was hunting up a boarding house.</i>
Ódio lo studiáre.	<i>I hate studying.</i>

70. The English gerund preceded by a preposition is translated as follows:

1. If the preposition is a necessary part of the thought, it is expressed in Italian, and the English gerund is rendered by the infinitive with the definite article. This article is, however, omitted (unless it would be used in English) after the following prepositions:

di, <i>of.</i>	invéce di, <i>instead of.</i>	sénza, <i>without.</i>
dópo di, <i>after.</i>	príma di, <i>before.</i>	

Oltre il fáre scárabócchi scrive mále.	<i>Besides making blots he writes badly.</i>
Parlái cóntro il trárré útile di quél-la disgrázia.	<i>I spoke against utilizing that misfortune.</i>
Il vízio di fumáre.	<i>The habit of smoking.</i>
Ho l' abitudíno di coricármí tárdi.	<i>I am in the habit of going to bed late.</i>
Invéce di dírmí tútto.	<i>Instead of telling me everything.</i>
Príma di moríre.	<i>Before dying.</i>
Parliámo sénza rifléttere.	<i>We speak without thinking.</i>

2. If in English the omission of the preposition, although it made the construction awkward, would not essentially change the

meaning, the phrase is rendered in Italian by the present participle without any preposition.

Studiando si impára.	(Through) studying we learn.
Dovrêi corrispóndere álla súa cortesía ascoltándola.	I ought to acknowledge her courtesy (by) listening to her.
Partêdo incontrò un amíco.	(On) going away he met a friend.
Copiando non fa erróri.	(In) copying he makes no mistakes.

3. To amuse one's self by . . . and to weary one's self by . . . are *divertírsi a . . .* and *affannársi a . . .* with the infinitive:

*Si divêrte a tirár sássi.* *He amuses himself throwing stones.*

Some other verbs often take this construction.

71. Following are some other rules for the use of the infinitive and participles:

(a) When any verb is used as an auxiliary, the mood and tense are expressed in that verb, and not in the dependent infinitive (see 57).

*Avrêi potúto fárló.* *I could have done it.*

(b) After *fáre*, to make or to have (=to cause), *sentíre* and *udíre*, to hear, and *vedére*, to see, the Italian present infinitive is used to render an English past participle. After *lasciáre*, to let, and often after the preposition *da* an Italian active infinitive is used to translate a passive one in English.

<i>Si fa capíre.</i>	<i>He makes himself understood.</i>
<i>Farò fáre un páio di scárpe.</i>	<i>I shall have a pair of shoes made.</i>
<i>L' ho sentíto díre.</i>	<i>I have heard it said.</i>
<i>Lo víde ammazzáre.</i>	<i>He saw him killed.</i>
<i>Si láscia ingannáre.</i>	<i>He lets himself be deceived.</i>
<i>Non c' è niênte da fáre.</i>	<i>There is nothing to be done.</i>

(c) The Italian past participle is inflected like any other adjective. The present participle (which was originally an ablative gerund) is invariable.

When in English the present participle is used adjectively, without any verbal force whatsoever, it is translated, not by the

form we have called the participle, but by a verbal adjective, which can be formed from almost any Italian verb by changing the infinitive ending into *-ante* for the first conjugation, and into *-ente* for the others. This adjective may be used substantively. It was originally a present participle, and some Italian writers have used it as such.

Quésti vási sóno rótti.

*These vases are broken.*

La dóнна sta cucêndo.

*The woman is sewing.*

Stávano parlándo.

*They were speaking.*

Un animále parlánte.

*A speaking animal.*

Ácqua bollênte.

*Boiling water.*

Dúe amánti.

*Two lovers.*

(d) A whole conditional clause (or protasis) is often replaced in Italian by a present participle, or by an infinitive with *a*.

Andándovi lo vedrêbbe.

*If he went there, he would see it.*

A bucársi êsce il sângue.

*If you prick yourself, blood comes.*

(e) Writers sometimes use, instead of a clause in indirect discourse, an infinitive followed by the word that would have been subject of the clause.

Dísse êssere quésto l' uômo  
che cercavámo.

*He said this was the man we were  
looking for.*

72. In negative commands the infinitive is always used instead of the second person singular of the imperative.

Trôvalo.

*Find it.*

Non lo trovâre.

*Do not find it.*

But the negative of *trovâre* is *non lo trovâte*.

73. When an action is represented as having taken place and still continuing, the English uses the present perfect, or past perfect tense, the Italian the present or the past descriptive.

Stúdio l'italiáno da ôtto  
mési.

*I have studied Italian for eight  
months.*

74. In subordinate clauses referring to the future and introduced by a conjunction of time, where the present is often used in English, the future tense must be employed in Italian.

Quándo vi andrò, gliélo dirò.     *When I go there, I'll tell him.*

(a) The future is often used, without any idea of future time, to express probability.

Sarà uscito.

*He has probably gone out.*

Avrà molto denáro.

*He probably has a great deal of money.*

75. The difference between the past descriptive (or imperfect) and the past absolute (or preterit) is this: the latter is used of an event that occurred at a definite date in the past, the former is used in a description or in speaking of an accessory circumstance or an habitual action in past time — the preterit is a narrative, the imperfect a descriptive tense.

The second past perfect (or preterit perfect) is used — instead of the past perfect (or pluperfect) — only after conjunctions meaning as soon as (*appéna che, súbito che, tòsto che*), and sometimes after *quándo*, *when*, or *dópo che*, after when immediate sequence is denoted.<sup>1</sup>

Entrò mentre dormivámo.

*He came in while we slept.*

Facévo cosí ógni mattina.

*I did so every morning.*

Lo féce l' ánno scorso.

*He did it last year.*

Tòsto che l' ebbe vísto, uscì.

*As soon as he had seen it, he went.*

(a) In conversation the present perfect is often used instead of the past absolute, when the event is not remote. This use is however, far more restricted than it is in French.

Vi sóno andáto ièri.

*I went there yesterday.*

<sup>1</sup> It is used also in phrases like: *in cinque minúti ebbe finíta la lèttera*, *in five minutes he had the letter finished.*



76. The past future (or conditional), like the English *should* and *would*, has two uses: in *indirect discourse* after a principal verb in a past tense it expresses the tense which in direct discourse would be future<sup>1</sup>; in the *conclusion* of a conditional sentence it is used when the conditional clause (or, if expressed, would be) in the past subjunctive (see 7).

Dísse che lo farêbbe.

Se fósse véro lo crederêi.

Quêsta cása mi converrêbbe.

*He said he would do it.*

*If it were true, I should believe it.*

*This house would suit me.*

77. When a condition is contrary to *present* fact, or consists of a more or less unlikely supposition referring to *future* time,<sup>2</sup> the conditional clause has the past (or imperfect) subjunctive, the conclusional clause has the past future (or conditional).

If the unreal condition refers to *past* time, the conditional clause has the past perfect subjunctive, the conclusional clause has the past future perfect.<sup>3</sup>

Otherwise both condition and conclusion are in the indicative.

Se l' avéssi te lo darêi.

Se fósse tornáto l' avrêi vedúto.

Se venísse nói ce ne andrémmo.

Se vi andássi morrêi.

Se non è véro è ben trováto.

Se lo féce sarà puníto.

*If I had it, I should give it thee.*

*If he had returned, I should have seen him.*

*If he came, we should go.*

*If I should go there, I should die.*

*If it isn't true, it's a good invention.*

*If he did it, he will be punished.*

<sup>1</sup> The perfect of the future or the conditional is sometimes used where the simple tense would be expected: *dísse che non l' avrêbbe fáto più*, *he said he would do it no more*.

<sup>2</sup> Rendered in English by the past, or by the auxiliary *should*.

<sup>3</sup> The imperfect indicative is occasionally used to replace the past or past perfect subjunctive of the condition (or protasis) and the past future or past future perfect of the conclusion (or apodosis): *as se veníva, mi dicéva tútto*, *if he had come, he would have told me everything*.

(a) The missing persons of the imperative are supplied from the present subjunctive. The past subjunctive is used to express a wish that is not likely to be realized.

Si accômodi.	<i>Be seated (sing.).</i>
Stïano zitti.	<i>Be quiet (plur.).</i>
Sia pûre.	<i>Be it so.</i>
Vêngano súbito.	<i>Let them come at once.</i>
Fôsse pûre!	<i>Would it were so!</i>

(b) When a relative clause restricts its antecedent to one of all its possible conditions or actions, the verb of that relative clause is in the subjunctive, — the present subjunctive if the verb on which it depends be present or future, the past if it be past or past future.

Non c' è animále più bellïno d' un gátto giòvane che fác- cia il chiàsso.	<i>There is no animal prettier than a kitten that is at play.</i>
Dóve troveréte un giòvine che spôsï vói?	<i>Where will you find a young man who will marry you?</i>
Vorréi vedére un bel quádرو che non fôsse antïco.	<i>I should like to see a fine picture that is not old.</i>

(c) The verb of a subordinate clause depending on an impersonal verb, on a superlative, or on one of the words *first*, *last*, and *only*, is in the subjunctive. This rule does not apply to reflexive verbs, nor to affirmative phrases meaning *it is true* or *it is because*.

Bisognò ch' io vi andássi.	<i>I had to go there.</i>
È giústo che siano puniti.	<i>It's right they should be punished.</i>
Il più bello ch' io conôsca.	<i>The finest that I know.</i>
Si véde che non è così.	<i>You see it isn't so.</i>
È véro che ci sôno státo.	<i>It's true that I've been there.</i>

(d) The subjunctive is used after all conjunctions meaning *although*, *as if*, *unless*, *provided that*, *in order that*, *in such a way that* (denoting purpose), *before*, *until* (referring to future), *whenever*, *wherever*, *without*.

Benchè stia nascôsto, lo tro- verò, dovúnque sia.	<i>Although he be hidden, I shall find him, wherever he is.</i>
Partirò a méno che égli non vênga.	<i>I shall go unless he comes.</i>

Lo féce perchê lo veníssi.	<i>He did it that I might come.</i>
La divíse in módo che le dúe párti fóssero uguáli.	<i>He divided it in such a way that the two parts should be equal.</i>
Aspétta finchê lo tórni.	<i>Wait until I return.</i>
Párti sénza che ti véda.	<i>Go without his seeing you.</i>

(e) The subjunctive is used after the indefinite words and phrases *quále che*, *qualúnque*, *chiúnque*, *checchè*, *per quánto*.

Chiúnque vênga.	<i>Whoever comes.</i>
Qualúnque disgrázia che suc- cêda.	<i>Whatever misfortune happens.</i>
Per quánte vólte ci váda.	<i>However many times I go there.</i>
Per quánto ricco égli sfa.	<i>However rich he may be.</i>

(f) The verb of an indirect question is nearly always in the subjunctive when it depends on a main verb in a past tense.<sup>1</sup>

Domándano se il re è mórto.	<i>They ask whether the king is dead.</i>
Domandò se il pádre fósse uscíto.	<i>He asked whether his father was out.</i>

(g) In a clause dependent on a verb of saying the subjunctive is used if the main verb is negative, or interrogative, or in a past tense.<sup>1</sup>

It is generally not used, however, after an affirmative verb in a past tense when the author himself wishes to imply that the indirect statement is true.

Díce che la còsa è chiaríssima.	<i>He says the thing is perfectly clear.</i>
Non dico che quésto sía véro.	<i>I don't say this is true.</i>
Díssero che lo zío fósse amma- láto.	<i>They said their uncle was ill.</i>
Gli díssi che mi chiamáva En- rico.	<i>I told him my name was Henry.</i>

(h) The subjunctive is used after verbs expressing causation, concession, desire, emotion, prevention, and uncertainty: i.e., after verbs of bringing about; granting, permitting; commanding, hoping, requesting, wishing; fearing, regretting, rejoicing; forbidding, hindering; being ignorant, denying, disbelieving, doubting, expect-

<sup>1</sup> The term *past tense* includes the past future.

ing, pretending, supposing, suspecting, thinking. But *sperare*, to hope, very often does not take the subjunctive.

Non so chi siano.	<i>I don't know who they are.</i>
Vorrèi che non fósse accadúto.	<i>I wish it had not happened.</i>
Supponiámo che sía prováto.	<i>Let us suppose that it is proved.</i>
Spèro che verrà.	<i>I hope he will come.</i>

(i) *Se*, *if*, is occasionally omitted before a past subjunctive; in this case the subject, if expressed, must follow the verb.

Saréi felice venísse égli.	<i>I should be happy, should he come.</i>
----------------------------	---

## CONJUNCTIONS, PREPOSITIONS, AND ADVERBS

### CONJUNCTIONS

78. The principal conjunctions are:

<i>after</i> , dópo che.	<i>however</i> (before an adj.), qualúnque, per quáto.
<i>also</i> , ánche, púre.	<i>if</i> , se (occasionally quándo, óve).
<i>although</i> , benchè, sebbène, non ostánte che.	<i>in case</i> , cásó.
<i>and</i> , e.	<i>in order that</i> , perchè, acciochè, affinché.
<i>as</i> , cóme, quáto (after tánto).	<i>much less</i> , non che.
<i>as</i> (= <i>since</i> ), siccóme, poichè.	<i>neither . . . nor</i> , nè . . . nè.
<i>as fast as</i> , vía vía che.	<i>nevertheless</i> , tuttavía, nondiméno, però.
<i>as if</i> , cóme se, quási.	<i>nor</i> , nè, nemméno, neppure.
<i>as long as</i> , finchè.	<i>nor . . . either</i> , nemméno, neppure.
<i>as well as</i> , cóme áncó.	<i>nor even</i> , neánche, neppure.
<i>because</i> , perchè.	<i>not to say . . . but even</i> , non che . . .
<i>before</i> , prima che, avánti che.	<i>ma</i> .
<i>both . . . and</i> , e . . . e.	<i>or</i> , o, ovvéro, ossia.
<i>but</i> , ma.	<i>or else</i> , ossia.
<i>either . . . or</i> , o . . . o.	<i>provided that</i> , purchè.
<i>even if</i> , ánche se, ancorchè.	<i>rather</i> , ánzí.
<i>except that</i> , se non che.	<i>since</i> (temporal), dacchè.
<i>for</i> , chè.	<i>since</i> (causal), poichè, siccóme.
<i>granting that</i> , dáto che.	<i>so</i> , dúnque, adúnque.
<i>however</i> (= <i>nevertheless</i> ), però, púre.	

*so that* (result), *di mōdo che, sic-  
chè.*

*so that* (= *in order that*), *perchè.*

*than, che.*

*that, che.*

*that* (= *in order that*), *perchè.*

*then, dúnque.*

*therefore, dúnque, però, perciò,  
adúnque* (at the beginning of a  
clause).

*too, púre, ánche.*

*unless, a méno che non, eccétto  
che non, sénza che.*

*until, finchè non.*

*when, quándo.*

*whence, dónde.*

*where, dóve, óve, là dóve.*

*wherever, dovúnque.*

*whether, se.*

*while, méntre, méntre che.*

The final vowel of *ánche, che, dóve, neppúre*, and *óve* is generally elided before *e* or *i*.

(a) Of the above conjunctions the following require the subjunctive:

<i>acciochè</i>	<i>cóme se</i>	<i>prima che</i>
<i>affinchè</i>	<i>dáto che</i>	<i>purchè</i>
<i>a méno che non</i>	<i>dovúnque</i>	<i>qualúnque</i>
<i>ancorchè</i>	<i>eccétto che non</i>	<i>quási</i>
<i>avánti che</i>	<i>non ostánte che</i>	<i>sebbène</i>
<i>benchè</i>	<i>perchè meaning in order that</i>	<i>sénza che</i>
<i>cáso</i>	<i>per quánto</i>	

For the use of *che, that*, with the subjunctive, see 77, *c, g, h*. *Cóme* is occasionally used for *cóme se*, and then it takes the subjunctive. *Finchè* when referring to the future sometimes has the sense of *finchè non*, and then it generally takes the subjunctive. *Se* is followed by the subjunctive when it introduces an indirect question or statement dependent on a verb in a past tense, or a condition contrary to fact. *Quándo* and *óve*, meaning *if*, frequently take the subjunctive when *se* would not. — For examples, see 77, *c, d, f, g, h*.

(b) *Che* cannot be omitted in Italian as *that* is in English:<sup>1</sup>

*Disse che fósse véro.*

*He said it was true.*

*Se* can be omitted before an imperfect subjunctive (see 77, *i*).

<sup>1</sup> It is omitted, however, in the following peculiarly Italian construction: *il ragazzo paréva fósse felice, the boy seemed to be happy*; that is, between a verb of seeming and the subjunctive dependent on it, when in English the construction would be a verb of seeming with a dependent infinitive. It is occasionally omitted also after verbs of wishing, hoping, and fearing; as *spéro mi scríva prèsto, I hope you will write to me soon*.



(c) E and o are often written ed and od before a vowel.

Mío pádre ed io.

*My father and I.*

(d) Between a verb of motion and an infinitive *and* is rendered by the preposition *a*.

Andrò a cercálo.

*I'll go and look for it.*

(e) When *anche*, *also* or *too*, relates to a personal pronoun, the disjunctive form of that pronoun must follow *anche*, even if some form of the same pronoun has already been expressed.

Andrémo *anche* nói.

*We shall go too.*

Párte anch' égli.

*He goes away too.*

Trovái *anche* lui.

*I found him too.*

Vénnero anch' éssi.

*They came too.*

Lo or me lo diéde *anche* a me.

*He gave it to me too.*

Ti piáce *anche* a te.

*You like it too.*

## PREPOSITIONS

79. The principal prepositions are:

*about* (= *approximately*), *circa*.

*beside* (place), *accanto a*.

*about* (= *around*), *intórno a*, *attórno a*.

*besides*, *beside* (= *in addition to*), *óltre*.

*above*, *sópra*.

*between*, *fra*, *tra*.

*according to*, *secóndo*.

*beyond*, *óltre*, *al di là di*.

*after*, *dópo*, *dópo di*.

*by*, *da*, *accanto a* (= *beside*).

*against*, *cóntra*, *cóntro*.

*by means of*, *per mēzzo di*.

*along*, *lúngo*.

*during*, *duránte*.

*among*, *fra*, *tra*.

*except*, *tránne*, *eccétto*, *fuòri di*.

*around*, *intórno a*, *attórno a*.

*from*, *da*, *fin da*.

*as far as*, *fino a*, *sino a*.

*in*, *in*.

*as for*, *per*, *quánto a*, *in quánto a*.

*in front of*, *davánti a*, *innánzi*.

*as to*, *rispétto a*.

*inside of*, *déntro di*.

*at*, *a*.

*instead of*, *invéce di*.

*because of*, *per motivo di*.

*in the midst of*, *in mēzzo a*.

*before* (time), *príma di*, *innánzi*.

*into*, *in*.

*before* (place), *davánti a*, *innánzi*.

*near*, *vicíno a*.

*behind*, *diétro*.

*of*, *di*.

*below*, *sótto*.

*on*, *su* (before a vowel, *sur*), *sópra*.

*on this side of*, al di qua di.  
*on to*, su (before vowels, sur), só-  
 pra.  
*opposite*, dirimpêtto a.  
*out of*, da, di, fuôri di.  
*outside of*, fuôri di.  
*over*, sópra.  
*round and round*, torno torno a.  
*since*, da.  
*to*, a.  
*toward*, vêrso.

*through*, per.  
*under*, sôtto.  
*upon*, su (before vowels, sur), só-  
 pra.  
*up to*, fino a, sino a.  
*with*, con.  
*within*, fra, tra.  
*within* (=inside of), déntro di.  
*without*, sénza.  
*without* (=outside of), fuôri di.

When governing a personal pronoun cóntra, diêtro, dópo, sénza, sópra, sôtto, and often fra and vêrso take di after them:

sénza di me, *without me*.

fra di lôro, *among themselves*.

After con, in, per, a word beginning with s impure generally prefixes i:<sup>1</sup>

la stráda, *the street*.

in istráda, *in the street*.

(a) *To* before the name of a country, after a verb of motion, is in.

Andiámo in Fráncia.

*Let us go to France.*

(b) *To* before an infinitive is rendered in Italian as follows:

### 1. After the verbs

bastáre, *suffice*  
 bisognáre, *need*  
 conveníre, *suit*  
 desideráre, *desire*  
 dovêre, *must, ought*

fáre, *make*  
 lasciáre, *let*  
 parére, *seem*  
 potére, *can, be able*  
 sapére, *know*

sentíre, *hear, feel*  
 solére, *be accustomed*  
 udíre, *hear*  
 vedére, *see*  
 volére, *wish*

*to* before a following infinitive is omitted. It is omitted also in exclamations and indirect questions consisting only of an interrogative and an infinitive.

Dovrêi capíre.

*I ought to understand.*

Bisógna pensárci.

*It is necessary to look out for it.* \*

Potrêmo veníre.

*We shall be able to come.*

Non sa che fáre nè dóve avvôl-  
 gersi.

*He doesn't know what to do nor  
 where to turn.*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 58, a.

2. After verbs of accustoming, attaining, beginning, compelling, continuing, hastening, helping, inviting, learning, preparing, teaching, and after verbs of motion, *to* before a following infinitive is *a*.

Andránno a vedér-la.	<i>They will go to see her.</i>
Si affrettò a rispòndere.	<i>He hastened to reply.</i>

3. After all other verbs it is *di*; but *to* denoting purpose or result is *per*, and *to* indicating duty or necessity is *da*.

Gli díssi di scrívere.	<i>I told him to write.</i>
Mi è gráto di dírlo.	<i>I am happy to say so.</i>
Lêgge per divertírsi.	<i>He reads to amuse himself.</i>
È tróppo bássso per arrivárci.	<i>He's too short to reach it.</i>
Ho qualchecòsa da fáre.	<i>I have something to do.</i>

(c) *By* denoting the agent is *da*.

Fu fáttö da lui.	<i>It was done by him.</i>
------------------	----------------------------

(d) *In* is *in*; but when expressing future time it is *fra*.

Fra tre giòrni sarà finíto.	<i>In three days it will be finished.</i>
-----------------------------	---

(e) *For* is *per*: as *l' ha fáttö per me*, *he has done it for me*. But in the sense of *since*, in speaking of past time, *for* is *da*. *For* meaning *during* is omitted or translated *duránte*. Sentences like *it is right for him to do it* must be translated by *che* with the subjunctive: *è giústo che lo fáccia*.

Dimòra da mólti ánni a Firênze.	<i>He has lived for many years at</i> <i>Florence (see 73).</i>
Resterò cinque settimáne.	<i>I shall stay for five weeks.</i>
Piòvve duránte un mése.	<i>It rained for a month.</i>
Bisógna ch' io váda.	<i>It is necessary for me to go.</i>

(f) *From* is *da*; but before adverbs and sometimes after verbs of departing it is *di*. In speaking of time it is generally *fin da*.

Arríva da Parígi.	<i>He arrives from Paris.</i>
È lontáno di qua.	<i>It is far from here.</i>
Èsco di càsa.	<i>I go out of the house.</i>
Fin dal princípío.	<i>From the beginning.</i>

(g) *Da* has, in addition to the meanings *by*, *from*, *since*, another sense hard to render in English: it may be translated *as*, *characteristic*.

*teristic of, destined for, such as to, or suited to, according to the context. Da means also at the house of or to the house of. Da corresponds to English on, at, or to before the word side, pártē, used in its literal sense.*

Prométto da uômo d' onôre.	<i>I promise as a man of honor.</i>
Il Salvini da Otêllo.	<i>Salvini as Othello.</i>
Sarêste tanto buôno da venîre?	<i>Would you be so good as to come?</i>
Quêsto è da sciôcchi.	<i>This is acting like a fool.</i>
Il bambîno ha un giudîzio da grânde.	<i>The child has the judgment of a grown person.</i>
La sála da prânzo.	<i>The dining-room.</i>
Ūna tázza da caffè.	<i>A coffee-cup.</i>
L' ho vedúto dal Signór Néri.	<i>I saw him at Mr. Neri's.</i>
Viêne da me.	<i>He comes to my house.</i>
Da quêsta pártē.	<i>On this side.</i>

(h) A is often used before a noun — not indicating material (which is expressed by di) nor purpose (expressed by da) — that describes another noun, when in English these two substantives would form a compound word.

Ūna mácchina a vapóre.	<i>A steam-engine.</i>
Ūna sêdia a dóndolo.	<i>A rocking-chair.</i>
Ūno sgabêllo a tre piêdi.	<i>A three-legged stool.</i>

(i) Êssere per or stâre per means *to be about to*.

Stáva per parlâre.	<i>He was on the point of speaking.</i>
--------------------	---

(j) In some idiomatic phrases di is used in Italian when another preposition would be employed in English.

Di giòrno, di nôtte.	<i>By day, by night.</i>
Êssere contênto di úna còsa.	<i>To be satisfied with a thing.</i>
Vivo di pânco.	<i>I live on bread.</i>
Che facêva dèlle fôrplici?	<i>What did he do with the scissors?</i>

## ADVERBS

80. 1. Adverbs, unless they begin the clause, are generally placed immediately after the verb; non, however, always precedes the verb. When a compound tense is

used, the adverb nearly always follows the past participle but *già*, *mái*, *più*, and *sêmpre* usually precede it. See also 8.

*Non* precedes a conjunctive and follows a disjunctive pronoun.

*Non ci vâdo mái.*

*I never go there.*

*Ho parlâto spêssô.*

*I have often spoken.*

*Non ha sêmpre parlâto cosî.*

*He hasn't always talked so.*

*Io non lo vêdo.*

*I don't see him.*

2. Adverbs are compared like adjectives (see 31); but *better*, *worse*, *more*, *less* are respectively *mêglio*, *pêggio*, *più*, *méno*.

81. *Yes* is *sì* or *già*: *sì* when it expresses real affirmation, *già* when it denotes passive assent. *No* is *no*. *Not* is *no* after which a word beginning with *s* impure generally prefixes *i*. *Or not* at the end of a clause is *o no*:

*Le piâce? — Sì.*

*Do you like it? — Yes.*

*Che tempâccio! — Già.*

*What nasty weather! — Yes.*

*Sta bêne? — No.*

*Is he well? — No.*

*Non istâ bêne.*

*He isn't well.*

*Sîa véro o no.*

*Whether it be true or not.*

(a) *What?* meaning *what do you say?* is *côme?* *Che* and the interjection *o* are often used to introduce questions.

*O perchê non rispondête? —* *Why don't you answer? —* *What?*

*Côme? — Che siête sôrdo, „ — Are you deaf, sir?*

*signóre?*

(b) *Very* is *mólto* (see, however, 35, a). Instead of using a word or suffix for *very*, the Italians often repeat the emphasizing adjective or adverb.

*È mólto bêllo or è bellîssimo.*

*It is very beautiful.*

*I suôi genitóri êrano pôveri pôveri.*

*His parents were very poor.*

82. *Only* may be translated by the adverb *sôlo*, *soltânto* or *solamênte*; or by the adjective *sôlo*. When it modifies



anything but a verb, it is often rendered by *non . . . che*, with the whole verb intervening, and with the word modified by *only* immediately after *che*.

*Non ne ho compráto che dúe. I have bought only two of them.*

83. *Never* is *non . . . mái*, with the inflected part of the verb intervening. *Just*, as an adverb of time, is *or óra*. *Early* is *prêsto*, *per têmpo*, or *di buôn' óra*. *This morning* is *stamáne*; *last night* is *stanôtte*. *The day after to-morrow* and *the day before yesterday* are respectively *domán l' áltro* and *iêr l' áltro*. *A week*, *a fortnight from to-day* are *ôggi a ôtto*, *a quíndici*. *Ago* is translated by *fa*, which follows the substantive of time; if this substantive is plural, *ago* may be rendered also by *sóno* (*êrano* or *saránno* if the date from which time is counted be past or future).

*Non ti ha mái vedúto.*

*He has never seen thee.*

*Son arriváti or óra.*

*They have just arrived.*

*Tre ánni fa.*

*Three years ago.*

*Quáttro giòrni sóno.*

*Four days ago.*

*Lunedì êrano dúe settimáne.*

*Two weeks ago Monday.*

*Dománi saránno cínque mési.*

*Five months ago to-morrow.*

84. *Here* and *there*, when they denote a place already mentioned, and no particular stress is laid upon them, are *ci* and *vi*, which are often used in Italian when they would be superfluous in English; *there is*, *there are*, etc., are *c' è* or *vi è*, *ci sóno* or *vi sóno*, etc. (sometimes *vi ha*). *Ci*, *vi*, and also *ne*, *thence*, occupy the same positions with regard to the verb, and undergo the same changes, as the pronouns *ci*, *vi*, *ne* (48, 50); they precede conjunctive pronouns beginning with *l* or *n*, and follow all others: *ce lo mánda*, *ti ci mándo*.

When emphasized, *here* is *quí* or *qua*, *there* indicating a place near the person addressed is *costì* or *costà*, and *there*

denoting a point remote from both speaker and hearer is *là* or *là*.

Cárolo vi è tornáto.

Álla scuóla non ci vádo.

Vói rimarróte costà, égli  
resterà laggiù, ed ío non  
partirò di qui.

*Charles has gone back there.*

*I don't go to school.*

*You will remain where you are, I  
will stay down there, and I shall  
not move from here.*

(a) *Here I am, here it is, etc., are êccomi, êccolo, etc.*

85. Most adverbs of manner are formed by adding *-mente* to the feminine singular of the corresponding adjective. Adjectives in *-le* and *-re* drop their final *e* in forming the adverb. See 35, a.

fráncó, *frank*.

felíce, *happy*.

piacévole, *pleasant*.

francaménte, *frankly*.

feliceménte, *happily*.

piacevolménte, *pleasantly*.

(a) *So meaning it is translated lo:*

Lo fáccio.

Lo créde.

Lo dícono.

*I do so.*

*He thinks so.*

*They say so.*

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

86. *One, people, we, you, they*, used in an indefinite sense are rendered in Italian by the reflexive construction with *si* (see 55).

Si cánta béne in Itália.

Si fa cosí.

Se ne párla.

Si fánnó spésso quése còse.

*They sing well in Italy.*

*You do this way.*

*People speak of it.*

*One often does these things.*

87. *All* as a substantive is *tútto* (*tútti*, etc.):

Tacévano tútti.

*All were silent.*

The adjective *all, the whole* is *tutto* followed by the definite article.

*Tutta la terra.*

*The whole earth.*

*Tutto il giorno.*

*All day.*

*Tutte le romane son belle.*

*All Roman ladies are beautiful.*

88. *Any*, when it really adds nothing to the sense, is omitted:

*Non ha libri.*

*He hasn't (any) books.*

*Voléte vino?*

*Do you want (any) wine?*

When, however, this redundant *any* might be replaced by *any of the*, it is translated by the partitive construction (see 12, a):

*Voléte del vino?*

*Do you want any (of the) wine?*

*Any* used substantively in the sense of *any of it, any of them* is *ne* (see 47, 3):

*Non ne ho.*

*I haven't any.*

*Non ne ha più.*

*He hasn't any more.*

*Ne avéte?*

*Have you any?*

*Any* used adjectively and meaning *any whatsoever* is *qualunque*:

*Lo fa meglio di qualunque  
altra persona.*

*He does it better than any other  
person.*

89. *Some*, when it adds nothing to the sense, is omitted or rendered by the partitive construction:

*Voléte burro or voléte del  
burro?*

*Will you have some butter?*

*Some* meaning *some of it, some of them* is *ne*:

*Ne ha.*

*He has some.*

Otherwise *some* is alcúno or quálche. Quálche is always singular (even when the meaning is plural), and is never used substantively.

Alcúne persóne or quálche      *Some persons.*  
persóna.

Alcúni lo dícono.      *Some say so.*

90. *Some . . . others, the one . . . the other, one . . . another* are translated by *chi . . . chi, áltri . . . áltri, l' úno . . . l' áltro*, or *alcúni . . . alcúni*.

Alcúni used in this way is always plural. A verb whose subject is *chi* or *áltri* (used in this sense) is always singular. *áltri* is not used after prepositions. But *l' úno* and *l' áltro* can be used in any case or number.

Tútti, chi più tósto, e chi      *All died, some sooner, some later.*  
méno, morívano.

Áltri cáde, áltri fúgge.      *Some fall, others flee.*

Gli úni son buòni, gli áltri      *Some are good, others bad.*  
cattívi.

91. Following is a list of some other indefinite pronouns and adjectives:

*anybody*, qualcúno, qualchedúno,  
chicchessí, pronouns.

*any more*, più, ne . . . più, pron.

*anything*, qualhecôsa, pron.

*anything else*, áltro, pron.

*both*, tútti e dúe, l' úno e l' áltro,  
ambedúe, pron. or adj.

*certain*, cêrto, adj.

*each*, ógni, ciascúno, ognúno, adj.

*either*, l' úno o l' áltro, pron. or  
adj.

*every*, ógni, ciascúno, ognúno, cia-  
schedúno, adj.

*everybody*, tútti (pl.), ciaschedúno,  
ciascúno, ognúno, pron.

*everything*, tútto, pron.

*few, a few*, pôchi (pl.), pron. or adj.

*however much (or many)*, p

quanto (-ti), adj.

*little*, pôco, pron. or adj.

*less*, méno, pron. or adj.<sup>1</sup>

*many*, mólti, pron. or adj.<sup>2</sup>

*more*, più, pron. or adj.

*much*, mólto, pron. or adj.

*neither*, non . . . l' úno nè l' áltro  
nè l' úno nè l' áltro, pron.

adj.

*no*, non . . . nessúno, non . . . a  
cúno, adj.

*nobody*, non . . . nessúno, pron.

<sup>1</sup> *Less*=smaller is più piccolo.

<sup>2</sup> *A great many* is moltissimi.

*no more*, non ne . . . più, pron.,  
 non . . . più, adj.  
*none*, non ne . . ., pron.  
*nothing*, non . . . niênte, non . . .  
 nùlla, pron.  
*nothing else*, non . . . più niênte,  
 non . . . più nùlla, pron.  
*others*, altrúi (see 91, d), pron.  
*several*, parécchi (fem. parécchie),  
 pron. or adj.

*somebody*, qualchedúno, qualcúno,  
 pron.  
*something*, qualhecôsa, pron.  
*something else*, áltro, pron.  
*such*, tále, adj.  
*such a*, un tále, adj. (but also pron.  
 in Ital., meaning *so-and-so*).  
*whatever*, qualúnque (invariable),  
 adj.

(a) The verb used with *nessúno*, *alcúno*, *niênte*, *nùlla* (meaning *no*, *nobody*, *nothing*) must be preceded by *non*, *not*, unless this pronoun or adjective precedes the verb.

Non ho visto nessúno.

*I have seen nobody.*

Nessún pópolo lo possiêde.

*No people possesses it.*

(b) *Nothing*, followed by an adjective, is *niênte di*.

Non avête niênte di buôno.

*You have nothing good.*

(c) *Ciascúno*, *ciaschedúno*, *ognúno*, *nessúno*, and *alcúno* when used adjectively are inflected like *úno* (see 14, 15).

(d) *Altrúi*, *another*, *others*, *our neighbor*, is invariable, and is not used as subject of a verb:

Con altrúi.

*With other people.*

Chi áma altrúi áma sè stésso.

*He who loves his neighbor loves himself.*

The prepositions *di* and *a* are sometimes omitted before it:

La móstro altrúi.

*I point her out to others.*

La vòglia altrúi.

*The will of another.*



## LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

Arranged according to Conjugation.<sup>1</sup>

92. This list contains no compound verbs except those which differ in conjugation from their simple verbs and those for which no simple verb exists in Italian. With every verb its irregular forms are given: in the same line with the infinitive are the present participle (if it be needed to show the original form of the infinitive), the first person singular of the past absolute indicative, the past participle, and the first person singular of the future indicative (if the future be contracted); immediately below are the present indicative, the imperative, and the present subjunctive, if these parts be peculiar. For *dâre* and *stâre* the whole past absolute and the first person singular of the past subjunctive are given also. *Êssere* is irregular throughout. *All tenses not mentioned are regular.* For peculiar endings, see 63, 68. Note the following rules:

(a) If the *present participle* is given, the following forms, unless expressly mentioned, are to be constructed from its stem: all *past absolute forms with accented endings*, and the whole *past descriptive* and *past subjunctive*. E.g., *fare*, pres. part. *facendo*: hence past abs. 2d sing. and 1st and 2d pl., *facésti*, *facémmo*, *facéste*; past descr., *facéva*, etc.; past subj., *facéssi*, etc.

If the present participle is not given, these forms, unless they be mentioned, are to be constructed from the stem of the infinitive. E.g., *venire*: past abs., *venísti*, *venímmo*, *veníste*; past descriptive, *veníva*; past subj., *veníssi*.

(b) A past absolute whose 1st pers. sing. ends in *-âi*, *-êi*, *-fi*, or *-êtti* (except *dêtti* and *stêtti*) is regular throughout. In any other past absolute the third person singular can be formed from the

<sup>1</sup> Reference to these tables is facilitated by an Alphabetical List of Irregular and Defective Verbs (see page 92). Students are advised not to learn forms in parentheses nor any verbs or forms marked *rare* or *poetical*.

first person by changing final *i* to *e*, and the third person plural by adding *-ro* to the third person singular. E.g., *fâre*, p. abs. *féci*: 3d sing., *féce*; 3d pl., *fécero*.

(c) If the future is not given, it is to be constructed from the infinitive. The past future always has the same stem as the future. See 65, p. 57.

(d) The imperative, when not given, is like the corresponding forms of the present indicative. See 66, *b*.

### FIRST CONJUGATION

#### 1. *Andâre*, *go*, *andâi*, *andâto*; *andrò* (*anderò*).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
<i>vâdo</i> or <i>vô</i>	<i>andiâmo</i>	<i>va'</i>	<i>vâda</i>	<i>andiâmo</i>
<i>vâi</i>	<i>andâte</i>	<i>andiâmo</i>	<i>vâda</i>	<i>andiâte</i>
<i>va</i>	<i>vânno</i>	<i>andâte</i>	<i>vâda</i>	<i>vâdano</i>

#### 2. *Fâre*, *do*, *facêndo*, *féci*,<sup>1</sup> *fâtto*; *farò*. *Fâre* (*formerly also fâcere*) *was originally a verb of the third conjugation* (see 92, *a*).

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
<i>fâccio</i> or <i>fô</i>	<i>facciâmo</i>	<i>fa'</i>	<i>fâccia</i>	<i>facciâmo</i>
<i>fâi</i> <sup>2</sup>	<i>fâte</i>	<i>facciâmo</i>	<i>fâccia</i>	<i>facciâte</i>
<i>fa</i> <sup>2</sup>	<i>fânno</i>	<i>fâte</i>	<i>fâccia</i>	<i>fâcciano</i>

#### 3. *Dâre*, *give*, *diêdi* or *dêtti*, *dâto*; *darò*. *Past subj.* *déssi*.

PRES. IND.	PAST. ABS.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
<i>dô</i>	<i>diêdi</i> or <i>dêtti</i>		<i>dâa</i>
<i>dâi</i>	<i>dêsti</i>	<i>da'</i>	<i>dâa</i>
<i>dâ</i>	<i>diêde</i> or <i>dêtte</i> <sup>3</sup>		<i>dâa</i>
<i>diâmo</i>	<i>démmo</i>	<i>diâmo</i>	<i>diâmo</i>
<i>dâte</i>	<i>dêste</i>	<i>dâte</i>	<i>diâte</i>
<i>dânno</i>	<i>diêdero</i> or <i>dêtterò</i> <sup>3</sup>		<i>dîano</i> or <i>dîeno</i>

<sup>1</sup> In poetry we sometimes find a past abs. *fêi*, *fêsti*, *fê* or *féo*, *fémmo*, *fêste*, *férono* or *féro* or *fénno*; and past descr. *fêa*, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Also *fâci fâce*.

<sup>3</sup> Also *diê*, sing.; *diêr* or *diêro* or *diêrono*, pl.

4. Stàre (67, a), *stand*, stètti, státo; starò. *Past subj.* stéssi.

PRES. IND.	PAST. ABS.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
stò	stètti		stía
stái	stésti	sta'	stía
sta	stètte		stía
stiámo	stémmo	stiámo	stiámo
státe	stéste	státe	stiáte
stánno	stëttero		stíano or stien

## SECOND CONJUGATION

5. Avére, *have*, ébbi, avúto; avrò. See 53, b.<sup>1</sup>

6. Sapére, *know*, sèppi, sapúto; saprò.

PRES. IND.	IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.
sò sappiámo	sáppi	sáppia sappiám
sái sapéte	sappiámo	sáppia sappiát
sa sánno	sappiáte	sáppia sappian

7. Cadére, *fall*, cáddi, cadúto; cadrò.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
cádo (cággio) cadiámo (caggiámo)	cáda (cággia) cadiámo (caggiám)
cádi cadéte	cáda (cággia) cadiáte (caggiáte)
cáde cádono (caggiono)	cáda (cággia) cádano (caggiano)

8. Dovére, *owe*, dovéi (dovètti), dovúto; dovrò. *Imperative lacking*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
dèvo (dèbbo or dèggio)	dèbba (dèva or dèggia)
dèvi (dèbbi)	dèbba (dèva or dèggia)
dève (dèbbe)	dèbba (dèva or dèggia)
dobbiámo (dèggiámo)	dobbiámo
dovéte	dobbiáte
dèvono (dèbbono or dèggiono) <sup>2</sup>	dèbbano (dèvano or dèggiano)

9. Sedére, *sit*, sedéi or sedètti, sedúto.

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
sièdo or sèggo sediámo (seggiámo)	sièda or sègga sediámo (seggiám)
sièdi sedéte	sièda or sègga sediáte
siède sièdono or sèggono	sièda or sègga sièdano or sèggano

<sup>1</sup> In poetry we find: ággio, ábbo, or áio for ho; áve for ha; ággia or áia for ábbia; for ébbi; a future arò, etc., or averò, etc., and similar forms in the past future.

<sup>2</sup> Also dèo, dèi, dèe, dovémo, dovéte, déono or dènno.

10. Vedére, *see*, vidi, vedúto or vísto; vedrò. Provvedére *has a future* provvederò; prevedére *has* prevederò or prevedrò. *All other compounds are like* vedére.

## PRES. IND.

vêdo (vêggo or vèggio)
vêdi
vêde
vediâmo (veggiâmo)
vedéte
vêdono (vèggono or vèggiono)

## PRES. SUBJ.

vêda (vègga or vèggia)
vêda (vègga or vèggia)
vêda (vègga or vèggia)
vediâmo (veggiâmo)
vediâte (veggiâte)
vêdano (vèggano or vèggiano)

11. Giacére, *lie*, giácqui, giaciúto.

## PRES. IND.

giácchio	giacciâmo
giâci	giacête
giâce	giâcciono

## PRES. SUBJ.

giâccia	giacciâmo
giâccia	giacciâte
giâccia	giâcciano

12. Piacére, *please: like* giacére (11).

13. Tacére, *be silent: like* giacére (11).

14. Solére, *be wont, solito. No past. abs., fut., past fut., nor imperative.*

## PRES. IND.

sòglio	sogliâmo
suôli	solête
suôle	sògliono

## PRES. SUBJ.

sòglia	sogliâmo
sòglia	sogliâte
sòglia	sògliano

15. Dolére, *grieve*, dôlsi, dolúto; dorrò.

## PRES. IND.

dôlgo (dôglio)	dogliâmo <sup>1</sup>
duôli	dolête
duôle	dôlgono (dôgliono)

## PRES. SUBJ.

dôlga (dôglia)	dogliâmo <sup>1</sup>
dôlga (dôglia)	dogliâte
dôlga (dôglia)	dôlgano (dôgliano)

16. Rimanére, *remain*, rimási, rimásto or rimáso; rimarrò.

## PRES. IND.

rimângo	rimaniâmo <sup>2</sup>
rimâni	rimanête
rimâne	rimângono

## PRES. SUBJ.

rimânga	rimaniâmo <sup>2</sup>
rimânga	rimaniâte
rimânga	rimângano

<sup>1</sup> Also dolghiâmo: a popular form.

<sup>2</sup> Also rimanghiâmo: a popular form.

17. Tenére, *hold*, ténni, tenúto; terrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
têngo	teniâmo <sup>1</sup>	tênga	teniâmo <sup>1</sup>
tiêni	tenéte	tênga	teniâte
tiêne	têngono	tênga	têngano

18. Valére, *be worth*, válsi, valúto or válso; varrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
válgo (váglio)	vagliâmo	válga (vágliã)	vagliâmo <sup>1</sup>
váli	valéte	válga (vágliã)	vagliâte
vále	válgono (vágliõno)	válga (vágliã)	válgano (vágliãno)

19. Volére, *wish*, vòlli,<sup>2</sup> volúto; vorrò.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
vòglio (vo')	vogliâmo	vògli	vòglia	vogliâmo
vuòlì <sup>3</sup>	voléte	vogliâmo	vòglia	vogliâte
vuòle	vògliõno	vogliâte	vòglia	vògliãno

20. Parére, *seem*, párvì, parúto or párso; parrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
páio	paíâmo or pariâmo	páia	paíâmo or pariâmo
pári	paréte	pála	paíâte
páre	páioño	páia	páiano

21. Potére, *be able*, potéi, potúto; potrò.<sup>4</sup> *No imperative.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
pósso	possiâmo	póssa	possiâmo
puòi	potéte	póssa	possiâte
può <sup>5</sup>	póssono <sup>5</sup>	póssa	póssano

22. Persuadére, *persuade*, persuási, persuásio. *Pres. persuádo, etc.*23. Calére, *matter*, cálse, calúto. *Impersonal. No fut., past fut. nor imperative. Not modern.*

PRES. IND.	PRES. SUBJ.
cále	cágliã

<sup>1</sup> Also tenghiâmo; valghiâmo: popular forms.<sup>2</sup> Also vòlsi.<sup>3</sup> Also vuògli or vuòli.<sup>4</sup> In poetry we find a fut. porò and a past fut. poria.<sup>5</sup> Also puòte; pòno.



## THIRD CONJUGATION

(e) All irregular verbs of the third conjugation are accented, in the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, on the same syllable as in the infinitive.

(f) Verbs in *-cere* and *-gere* insert no *i* between the *c* or *g* and the *o* or *a* of the present indicative and subjunctive endings, except in the first person plural of both moods and the second person plural of the subjunctive. Cf. 60, last paragraph.

(g) See chapter on Pronunciation, 4, *s, d*.

## Present Regular

24. *Accêndere, light, accési, accéso.*
25. *Affliggere, afflict, afflissi, afflító.*
26. *Álgere, be cold, álsi. Defective. Rare.*
27. *Allúdere, allude, allúsi (alludéi), allúso.*
28. *Árdere, burn, ársi, árso.*
29. *Arrôgere, add, arrôsi, arrôso or arrôto. Defective. Rare.*
30. *Assídere, besiege, assísi, assíso. Rare.*
31. *Assôlvère, absolve, assolvêtti or assolvéi or assôlsi, assôlto or assóluto. So risôlvère (determine). For sôlvère, dissôlvère, and risôlvère (dissolve), see 107.*
32. *Assôrbere, absorb, assôrsi (not in use), assôrto. Rare.*
33. *Avèllere, uproot, avúlse, avúlso. Defective. Rare.*
34. *Chiúdere, shut, chiúsi, chiúso. So all verbs in -chiúdere or -clúdere. See, however, 4, *s, d*.*
35. *Côlere, revere, cólto or cúlto. Defective. Rare.*
36. *Connêttère, connect, connêssi (connettéi), connêssò (connettúto). Rare.*
37. *Conôscere, know, conôbbi, conosciúto.*
38. *Conquídere, conquer, conquísi, conquíso. Rare.*
39. *Consumere, consume, consúnsi, consúnto. Rare. Presúmère has also presuméi.*
40. *Contúndere, bruise, contúsi, contúso.*
41. *Córrere, run, córsi, córso.*
42. *Créscere, grow, crébbi, cresciúto.*
43. *Cuôcere, cook, cocêndo, côssi, còtto. Pres. cuôcio or cuôco, etc.<sup>1</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> In the 1st and 2d persons plural of the pres. ind., subj., and imperative, *uo* is generally replaced by *o*: *cociámo, etc.* The *uo* occurs in those parts of the verb where the accent falls on that syllable.

44. Decídere, *decide*, decísi, decíso.
45. Difêndere, *defend*, difési (difendéi), diféso.
46. Dirígere, *direct*, dirêssi, dirêtto.
47. Discútere, *discuss*, discússi (discutéi), discússso.
48. Distíngere, *distinguish*, distínsi, distínto.
49. Divídere, *divide*, divísi, divíso.
50. Elídere, *elide*, elísi (elidéi), elíso.
51. Elúdere, *elude*, elúsi (eludéi or eludêtti), elúso.
52. Êrgere, *erect*, êrsi, êrto. *Rare*.
53. Esígere, *exact*, esigéi (esigêtti), esátto.
54. Esístere, *exist*, esistéi (esistêtti), esistíto.
55. Espêllere, *expel*, espúlsi, espúlso. *Rare*.
56. Esplôdere, *explode*, esplôsi, esplôso.
57. Esprimere, *express*, esprêssi, esprêssso. *So all other verbs -prímere. Prêmere and its compounds with ê are regular.*
58. Fêndere, *split*, fendéi (fendêtti or fêssi), fendúto or fêssso.
59. Fíggere (fígere), *fix*, físsi, fítto.
60. Fíngere, *feign*, fínsi, fínto.
61. Fóndere, *melt*, fúsi (fondéi), fúso (fondúto).
62. Frángere, *break*, fránsi, fránto.
63. Fríggere, *fry*, fríssi, frítto.
64. Genuflêttère, *kneel*, genuflêssi, genuflêssso. *Rare*.
65. Intrídere, *dilute*, intrísi, intríso.
66. Intrúdere, *intrude*, intrúsi, intrúso.
67. Invádere, *invade*, invási, inváso.
68. Lêdere, *offend*, lêsi (*not in use*), lêso. *Rare*.
69. Lêggere, *read*, lêssi, lêtto.
70. Lícere or lécere, *be lawful*, lécito or lícito. *Impersonal. Defective. Poetical.*
71. Lúdere, *play*, lúsi, lúso. *Rare*.
72. Mêrgere, *plunge*, mêrsi, mêrso. *Rare*.
73. Mêttere, *pul*, méssi or ~~mísi~~, méssso.
74. Mólcere, *soothe*, múlse. *Defective. Rare*.
75. Môrdere, *bite*, môrsi, môrso.
76. Muôvere, *move*, movêndo, môssi, môssso.<sup>1</sup>
77. Nâscere, *be born*, nâcqui, náto.
78. Nascôndere, *hide*, nascósi, nascósto.
79. Neglígere (*see* 5, gli), *neglect*, neglêssi, neglêtto.
80. Offêndere, *offend*, offési, offéso.
81. Ostêndere, *show*. *Defective. Rare*.
82. Percípere, *perceive*, percêtto. *Defective. Rare*.
83. Pêrdere, *lose*, perdéi or perdêtti or pèrsi, perdúto or pèrso.
84. Piôvere, *rain*, piôvve (piovè), piováto. *Impersonal*.

<sup>1</sup> See page 85, footnote.

85. Pòrgere, *present*, pòrsi, pòrto.
86. Predilìgere, *prefer*, predilèssi, predilètto.
87. Prèndere, *take*, prési, préso.
88. Protèggere, *protect*, protèssi, protètto.
89. Rádere, *shave*, rási (radéi), rásó.
90. Redímere, *redeem*, redènsi (rediméi), redénto.
91. Rêggere, *support*, rêssi, rêtto.
92. Rêndere, *render*, rêsi (rendéi or rendètti), rêso (rendúto).
93. Rídere, *laugh*, rísi, ríso.
94. Riflèttere, *reflect*, riflètéi or riflèssi, riflèttúto or riflèssó. Riflèttere, *reflect light*, is generally irregular; riflèttere, *meditate*, is usually regular.
95. Rifúlgerè, *shine*, rifúlsi. *Past part. lacking. Poetical.*
96. Rilúcere, *shine*, rilússi or rilucéi. *Past part. lacking.*
97. Rispòndere, *answer*, rispósi, rispósto.
98. Ródere, *gnaw*, rósi, róso.
99. Rómpere, *break*, rúppi, rótto.
100. Scéndere, *descend*, scési, scéso.
101. Scíndere, *sever*, scíndéi or scíssi, scíssó.
102. Sciòlvere, *breakfast*, sciòlsi or sciolvètti, sciòlto. *Rare.*
103. Scòrgere, *perceive*, scòrsi, scòrto.
104. Scrivere, *write*, scríssi, scrítto.
105. Scuòtere, *shake*, scoténdo, scòssi, scòssó.<sup>1</sup>
106. Soffòlcere, *support*, soffólse, soffólto. *Defective. Rare.*
107. Sòlvere, *undo*, solvéi (solvètti), solúto. *Poetical. So dissòlvere; for assòlvere and risòlvere (determine), see 31.*
108. Sòrgere, *rise*, sòrsi, sòrto.
109. Sospèndere, *suspend*, sospési, sospéso. *So appèndere, impèndere. Pèndere is reg.; dipèndere either reg. or irreg.*
110. Spándere, *spill*, spandéi or spandètti, spánto.
111. Spárgere, *scatter*, spársi, spárso or spárto.
112. Spèndere, *spend*, spési, spéso.
113. Spèrgere, *disperse*, spèrsi, spèrso. *Rare.*
114. Spòrgere, *project*, spòrsi, spòrto.
115. Strúggere, *melt*, strússi, strútto.
116. Succèdere, *happen*, succèssi or succedéi, succèssó or succedúto. *So concèdere, which has also concedètti; cèdere and its other compounds are generally regular.*
117. Sùggere, *suck*, suggéi or sússi. *Past part. lacking. Rare.*
118. Tèndere (*transitive*), *extend*, tési, téso. *The intrans. verb is reg. but has no past participle.*
119. Tèrgere, *wipe*, tèrsi or tergéi, tèrso. *Rare.*
120. Tòrcere, *twist*, tòrsi, tòrto.

<sup>1</sup> See page 85, footnote.

121. Uccidere, *kill*, uccisi, ucciso.  
 122. Vincere, *conquer*, vinsi, vinto.  
 123. Vivere, *live*, vissi, vissuto *or* vivuto; viverò *or* vivrò.  
 124. Volgere, *turn*, vòlsi, vòlto.  
 125. Volvere, *turn*, vòlsi, vòlto. *Rare.* Devolvere *has a past past* devoluto.

### Present Irregular

126. Êssere, *be*, fúi, státo; sarò. See 53, a.<sup>1</sup>  
 127. Bére *or* bévere, *drink*, bevêndo, bévvi (bevêtti *or* bevéi), vúto (beúto); berò *or* beverò.

#### PRES. IND.

bévo <i>or</i> béo	beviámo <i>or</i> beiámo
bévi <i>or</i> béi	bevéte <i>or</i> beéte
béve <i>or</i> bée	bévono <i>or</i> héono

#### PRES. SUBJ.

béva <i>or</i> béa	beviámo <i>or</i> beiám
béva <i>or</i> béa	beviáte <i>or</i> beiáte
béva <i>or</i> béa	bévano <i>or</i> béano

128. Chiêdere, *ask*, chiési (chiési *or* chiedéi), chiêsto.

#### PRES. IND.

chiêdo (chiêggo) <sup>2</sup>
chiêdi
chiêde
chiediámo
chiedéte
chiêdono (chiêggono) <sup>2</sup>

#### PRES. SUBJ.

chiêda (chiêgga) <sup>2</sup>
chiêda (chiêgga)
chiêda (chiêgga)
chiediámo
chiediáte
chiêdano (chiêggano) <sup>2</sup>

129. Condurre, *conduct*, conducêndo, condússi, condótto; condurr

#### PRES. IND.

condúco	conduciámo
condúci	conducéte
condúce	condúcono

#### PRES. SUBJ.

condúca	conduciámo
condúca	conduciáte
condúca	condúcano

130. Nuocere, *harm*, nocêndo, nôcqui, nociúto.

#### PRES. IND.

nuôco <i>or</i> nôccio	nociámo
nuôci	nocéte
nuôce	nuôcono <i>or</i> nôcciono

#### PRES. SUBJ.

nuôca <i>or</i> nôccia	nociámo
nuôca <i>or</i> nôccia	nociáte
nuôca <i>or</i> nôccia	nuôcano <i>or</i> nôcciano

<sup>1</sup> In the past descriptive êramo is often used for eravámo. We find in poet sête for slête; ênno *or* en for sôno (third pl.); sêe for sîa; erámo, eráte for eravá eraváte; u for o in the past absolute and past subjunctive; fóro for fúrono; fîa, fî or fîeno for sarà, saránno; fóra, fórano for saréi, sarébbe, sarébbero; sêndo for sêndo; súto, essúto, or issúto for státo.

<sup>2</sup> Also chiêggio, chiêggiono, chiêggia, chiêggiano.

131. Pórre, *put*, ponêdo, pósi, pósto; porró.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
pongo	poniámo (ponghiámo)	pónga	poniámo (ponghiámo)
poni	ponête	pónga	poniáte
pone	póngono	pónga	póngano

132. Trárre (tráere), *drag*, traêdo, trássi, trátto; trarrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
trággo	traiámo or traggiámo <sup>1</sup>	trágga	traiámo or traggiámo <sup>1</sup>
trái (trággi)	traête	trágga	traiáte
tráe (trágge)	trággono	trágga	trággano

133. Vêllere (vêrre), *tear up*, vêlsi, vélto; vellerrò (verrò or velgerò).  
Vêllere, *which is rare, has not all the forms given here; but its compound, svêllere, has them all.*

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
vêllo or vélgo	velliámo (velgiámo)	vêlla or vélga	velliámo (velgiámo)
vêlli (vêlgi)	velléte	vêlla or vélga	velliáte (velgiáte)
vêlle (vêlge)	vêllono or vélgono	vêlla or vélga	vêllano or vélgano

134. Cògliere (còrre), *gather*, còlsi, còlto; coglierò or corrò.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
còlgo (còglio)	cogliámo (colghiámo)	còlga (còglia)	cogliámo (colghiámo)
cògli	cogliéte	còlga (còglia)	cogliáte
còglie	còlgono (cògliono)	còlga (còglia)	còlgano (cògliano)

135. Scègliere (scérre), *choose: like cògliere* (134).136. Sciògliere (sciòrre), *untie: like cògliere* (134).137. Tògliere (tòrre), *take: like cògliere* (134).138. Giúngere (giúgnere), *to arrive*, giúnsi, giúnto; giungerò (giugnerò).

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
giúngo (giúgno)		giúnga (giúgna)	
giúngi (giúgni)		giúnga (giúgna)	
giúnge (giúgne)		giúnga (giúgna)	
giungiámo (giugniámo)		giungiámo (giugniámo)	
giungéte (giugnéte)		giungiáte (giugniáte)	
giúngono (giúgnono)		giúngano (giúgnano)	

139. Cíngere (cígnere), *gird: like giúngere* (138).140. Múgnere (múngere), *milk: like giúngere* (138).<sup>1</sup> Also traggiámo.



141. Piângere (piâgnere), *weep: like giúngere* (138).  
 142. Píngere (pígnere), *paint: like giúngere* (138).  
 143. Púngere (púgnere), *prick: like giúngere* (138).  
 144. Spêgnere (spêngere), *extinguish: like giúngere* (138), *except that the forms with gn are far commoner than those with ng.*  
 145. Spíngere (spígnere), *push: like giúngere* (138).  
 146. Stríngere (strígnere), *bind: like giúngere* (138), *except that the past part. is strétto or strinto. Costringere, compel, has for past part. only costrétto.*  
 147. Tíngere (tígnere), *dye: like giúngere* (138).  
 148. Úngere (úgnere), *anoint: like giúngere* (138).

## FOURTH CONJUGATION

### Present Regular

149. Apríre, *open, apríi or apêrsi, apêrto. Pres. ápro, etc.*  
 150. Copríre (cuopríre), *cover, copríi or copêrsi, copêrto. Pres. cópro (cuópro), etc.*  
 151. Offríre (offeríre), *offer, offríi (offeríi) or offêrsi, offêrto. Pres. ôffro (offerísco), etc.*  
 152. Soffríre, *suffer: like offríre* (151).  
 153. Convertíre, *convert, convertíi or convêrsi, convertíto or convertêrto. Pres. convêrto or convertísco, etc. All other verbs in -vertíre are reg.*  
 154. Costruírre (co(n)struírre), *construct, co(n)strússi or co(n)struítto, co(n)struítto or co(n)strúitto. Pres. co(n)struísco, etc.*  
 155. Digeríre, *digest, digeríi, digeríto (digêsto). Pres. digerísco, etc.*  
 156. Esauríre, *exhaust, esauríi, esauríto or esáusto. Pres. esaurísco, etc.*  
 157. Seppellírre or sepellírre, *bury, sep(p)ellíi, seppellíto or sepóltto. Pres. sep(p)ellísco, etc.*

### Present Irregular

158. Cucíre, *sew, cucíi, cucíto. Pres. cúcio or cucísco. This verb inserts i before o and a, but not before e and i.*  
 159. Sdrucíre or sdruscíre, *rip: like cucíre* (158).  
 160. Empírre or émpiere, *fill, empiéndto, empií, empiíto. All but the present form the stem of empiére. So compírre or cômplier which has also a past part. compiúto.*

#### PRES. IND.

émpio (empiíscio)	empiámo
émpi (empiísci)	empiíte
émpie (empiísce)	émpiono (empiíscono)

#### PRES. SUBJ.

émpia	empiámo
émpia	empiáte
émpia	émpiano

161. Moriré, *die*, morii, môrto; morrô or morirô.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
muôio (muôro)	moriâmo or muoiá- mo	muôia (muôra)	moriâmo or muoi- âmo
muôri or muôi	moríte	muôia (muôra)	muoiâte
muôre	muôiono (muôro- no)	muôia (muôra)	muôiano (muôra- no) <sup>1</sup>

162. Seguiré, *follow*, seguii, seguíto. Pres. séguo, etc. The verb is generally regular; but the *ê* may be changed to *iê* in all forms where it is accented. Proseguiré has -séguo or -seguísco.163. Spariré, *disappear*, sparíi or spárvi, sparíto. Pres. (regular) sparísco, etc. Appariré has appárvi or -si or -fi, apparíto or appárso; compariré has compárvi or -si or -fi, compárso; otherwise they are like spariré, but they have in the present the additional forms: -páio, -páre, -páiono; -páia, -páiano.164. Díre, *say*, dicêdo, díssi, détto; dirô. Díre (formerly dicere) belongs really to the third conjugation: dicésti, -éva, -éssi.

PRES. IND.		IMPER.	PRES. SUBJ.	
díco	diciâmo	dí'	díca	diciâmo
díci	díte	diciâmo	díca	diciâte
díce	dicono	díte	díca	dícano

165. Saliré, *ascend*, salti or sálsi, salíto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
sálgo (salísco)	saliâmo or sagliâmo <sup>2</sup>	sálga (salísca)	saliâmo or sagliâmo <sup>2</sup>
sáli (salís-ci)	salíte	sálga (salísca)	sagliâte
sáile (salísce)	sálgono (salíscono)	sálga (salísca)	sálgano (salíscono)

166. Veniré, *come*, vénni, venúto; verrô.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
vêngo (vêgno)	veniâmo <sup>2</sup>	vênga (vêgna)	veniâmo <sup>2</sup>
viêni	veníte	vênga (vêgna)	veniâte
viêne	vêngono (vêgnono)	vênga (vêgna)	vêngano (vêgnano)

167. Udiré, *hear*, udií, udíto; udirô (udrô).

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
ôdo	udiâmo	ôda	udiâmo
ôdi	udíte	ôda	udiâte
ôde	ôdono	ôda	ôdano

<sup>1</sup> In all forms where *uo* occurs, it may be replaced by *o*.<sup>2</sup> Also salghiâmo; venghiâmo: popular forms.

168. Uscíre (escíre), *go out*, uscí, uscíto.

PRES. IND.		PRES. SUBJ.	
êscó	usciámo	êscá	usciáme
êsci	uscíte	êscá	usciáte
êsce	êscono	êscá	êscano

169. Oríre, *be born*, órto. *Defective. Rare.*

## ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS

93. Every irregular verb in this list is followed by a number referring to the table of Irregular Verbs arranged according to Conjugation. Obsolete defective verbs that present no irregularity have not been mentioned.

(a) Compound verbs have, in general, been excluded from this list, unless they differ in conjugation from the simple verbs from which they come (see 67, a). The commonest prefixes are: a- (corresponding in meaning to the preposition a); as- (=Latin *abs-*); co-, com-, con-, cor- (=prep. *con*); contra- (=prep. *cóntra*); de-, di- (=Lat. *de-*); dis- (=Lat. *dis-*); e-, es- (=Lat. *ex*); i-, im-, in-, ir- (=prep. *in*); o- (=Lat. *ob*); per- (=prep. *per*); pre- (=Lat. *prae-*); pro- (=Lat. *pro-*); r-, re-, ri- (=Lat. *re-*); s- (=Lat. *ex-* or *dis-*); so-, sos-, su- (=Lat. *sub*); sopra-, sopr-, sor- (=prep. *sópra*); sott-, sotto- (=prep. *sótto*); stra- (=Lat. *extra*); tra- (=prep. *tra*). After several of these prefixes the initial consonant of the simple verb is generally found doubled: a+ca=dére=accadére. S- is sometimes combined with con-, r- with a- or in-: scoscéndere, raccôgliere, rincórrere.

Accadére, *see* cadérc, 7.

Accéndere, 24.

Acclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.

Accórgere, *see* scórgere, 103.

Acquisíre *has only* acquisíto.

Addúrre, *see* condúrro, 129.

Affliggere, 25.

Álgere, 26.

Allúdere, 27.

Ancídere, *see* uccídere, 121.

Andáre, 1.

Annêttete, *see* connêttete, 36.

Antepórre, *see* pórre, 131.  
 Antivedére, *p. p. only* antivedúto,  
*otherwise like* vedére, 10.  
 Apparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.  
 Appartenére, *see* tenérc, 17.  
 Appêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.  
 Apríre, 149.  
 Árdere, 28.  
 Arrôgere, 29.  
 Ascêndere, *see* scêndere, 100.  
 Ascíolvero, *see* sciolvere, 102.  
 Ascóndere, *see* nasóndere, 78.  
 Aspêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Ássalíre, *see* salíre, 165.  
 Ássídere, 30.  
 Ássistere, *see* csístere, 54.  
 Ássolvere, 31.  
 Ássôrbere, 32.  
 Ássumere, *see* consumere, 39.  
 Ávellere, 33.  
 Ávére, 5.  
 Bére, 127.  
 Bévere, *see* bére, 127.  
 Cadére, 7.  
 Calére, 23.  
 Cêdere, *generally reg., sometimes*  
*has p. abs. cêssi, p. p. cêssô.*  
 Chiêdere, 128.  
 Chiúdere, 34.  
 Cígnere, *see* cíngere, 139.  
 Cíngere, 139.  
 Círcóndere, *see* decídere, 44.  
 Cògliere, 134.  
 Coincídere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*  
 Còlere, 35.  
 Collúdere, *see* lúdere, 71.  
 Comparíre, *see* sparíre, 163.  
 Compêtere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*  
 Cómpiere, *see* cmpíre, 160.  
 Compíre, *see* cmpíre, 160.  
 Comprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.  
 Concêdere, *see* succêdere, 116.  
 Conclúdere, *see* chiúdere, 34.  
 Concútere, *see* discútere, 47.

Condúrre, 129.  
 Connéttere, 36.  
 Conóscere, 37.  
 Conquídere, 38.  
 Consístere, *see* esístere, 54.  
 Constáre *is reg.*  
 Construíre, *see* costruíre, 154.  
 Constúmere, 39.  
 Contêndere, *see* têndere, 118.  
 Contrastáre *is reg.*  
 Controvértere, *see* vêrtere.  
 Contúndere, 40.  
 Convêrgere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*  
 Convertíre, 153.  
 Copríre, 150.  
 Còrre, *see* cògliere, 134.  
 Córre, 41.  
 Corrispóndere, *see* rispóndere, 97.  
 Cospárgere, *see* spárgere, 111.  
 Cospêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Costruíre, 154.  
 Crêscere, 42.  
 Cucíre, 158.  
 Cuôcere, 43.  
 Cuopríre, *see* copríre, 150.  
 Dáre, 3.  
 Decídere, 44.  
 Dedúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.  
 Delínquere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*  
*and its p. abs., delinquêtti, is rare.*  
 Deprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.  
 Desístere, *see* esístere, 54.  
 Devolvere, *see* volvere, 125.  
 Difêndere, 45.  
 Digeríre, 155.  
 Dipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109.  
 Díre, 164.  
 Dirígere, 46.  
 Dirímere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*  
 Discêndere, *see* scêndere, 100.  
 Discútere, 47.  
 Dispêrgere, *see* spêrgere, 113.  
 Dissolvere, *see* solvere, 107.  
 Dissuadérc, *see* persuadére, 22.

Distàre, *reg. in pres. of all moods, no pres. p., otherwise like stàre, 4.*

Distínguere, 48.

Distrúggere, *see strúggere, 115.*

Divedére *has nothing but infin.*

Divèrgere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*

Divídere, 49.

Dolére, 15.

Dovére, 8.

Eléggere, *see lêggere, 69.*

Elídere, 50.

Elúdere, 51.

Êmpiere, *see empíre, 160.*

Empíre, 160.

Êrgere, 52.

Erígere, *see dirígere, 46.*

Esauríre, 156.

Escíre, *see uscíre, 168.*

Esclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*

Esígre, 53.

Esímere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*

Esístere, 54.

Espéllere, 55.

Esplôdere, 56.

Esprímere, 57.

Êssere, 126.

Estínguere, *see distínguere, 48.*

Evádere, *see invádere, 67.*

Fàre, 2.

Fêndere, 58.

Fêrvere, *reg. verb, has no p. p., and is rare except in the third pers. of the pres. ind. and past descr.*

Fígere, *see fíggere, 59.*

Fíggere, 59.

Fíngere, 60.

Fóndere, 61.

Frángere, 62.

Fríggere, 63.

Genúfiêttere, 64.

Giacére, 11.

Gíre, *defect.: pres. giámo, gíte; past descr. gíva or gía, etc.; imper.*

*giámo, gíte; pres. subj. giám  
giáte; no pres. p.; rest reg.*

Giúgnere, *see giúngere, 138.*

Giúngere, 138.

Illúdere, *see lúdere, 71.*

Impéllere, *see espéllere, 55.*

Impêndere, *see sospêndere, 109.*

Imprímere, *see osprímere, 57.*

Incidere, *see decídere, 44.*

Inclúdere, *see chiúdere, 34.*

Incútere, *see discútere, 47.*

Indúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*

Insistere, *see esístere, 54.*

Instàre *is reg.*

Instrúire, *see constrúire, 154.*

Intêndere, *see têndere, 118.*

Intercêdere, *see succêdere, 116.*

Intrídere, 65.

Introdúrre, *see condúrre, 129.*

Intrúdere, 66.

Invádere, 67.

Invalére, *p. p. only inválso, othe  
wise like valére, 18.*

Íre, *defect.: pres. íte; p. des. íva, etc.  
p. abs. ísti, íste, íro; fut. írem*

*írete, íranno; imper. íte; pa  
subj. ísse, íste, íssero; p. p. íto*

Istrúire, *see costrúire, 154.*

Lécere, *see lícere, 70.*

Lêdere, 68.

Lêggere, 69.

Lícere, 70.

Lúcere, *reg. verb, has no p. p.*

Lúdere, 71.

Mantenére, *see tenére, 17.*

Mêrgere, 72.

Méttere, 73.

Mólcere, 74.

Môrdere, 75.

Moríre, 161.

Múgnere, 140.

Múngere, *see múgnere, 140.*

Muôvere, 76.

Náscre, 77.



- Nascóndere, 78.  
 Negligere, 79.  
 Nuócere, 130.  
 Offêndere, 80.  
 Officîre, *see* offîre, 151.  
 Offîre, 151.  
 Opprimere, *see* esprimere, 57.  
 Orîre, 169.  
 Ostâre *is reg.*  
 Ostêndere, 81.  
 Parêre, 20.  
 Percîpere, 82.  
 Percuôtère, *see* scuôtère, 105.  
 Pêrdere, 83.  
 Permanêre, *see* rimanêre, 16.  
 Persistere, *see* esîstere, 54.  
 Persuadêre, 22.  
 Piacêre, 12.  
 Piâgnere, *see* piângere, 141.  
 Piângere, 141.  
 Pîgnere, *see* pîngere, 142.  
 Pîngere, 142.  
 Piôvere, 84.  
 Pîrgere, 85.  
 Pôrre, 131.  
 Pospôrre, *see* pôrrre, 131.  
 Possedêre, *see* sedêre, 9.  
 Potêre, 21.—  
 Precîdere, *see* decidere, 44.  
 Preclûdere, *see* chiûdere, 34.  
 Prediligere, 86.  
 Prêmere *is reg.*  
 Prêndere, 87.  
 Prestâre *is reg.*  
 Presûmere, *see* consûmere, 39.  
 Prevedôre, *see* vedêre, 10.  
 Prodûrre, *see* condûrre, 129.  
 Protêggere, 88.  
 Provvedêre, *fut. and past fut. un-*  
*contracted, otherwise like vedêre,*  
*10.*  
 Prûdere, *reg. verb, has no p. p., and*  
*is used only in the third pers.*  
 Pûgnere, *see* pûngere, 143.  
 Pûngere, 143.  
 Raccôgliere, *see* cògliere, 134.  
 Râdere, 89.  
 Raggiûngere, *see* giûngere, 138.  
 Recîdere, *see* dccîdere, 44.  
 Redîmere, 90.  
 Râggere, 91.  
 Rêndere, 92.  
 Repêllere, *see* espêllere, 55.  
 Reprimere, *see* csprimere, 57.  
 Resîstere, *see* esîstere, 54.  
 Restâre *is reg.*  
 Rîdere, 93.  
 Ridûrre, *see* condûrre, 129.  
 Riflêttère, 94.  
 Rifûlgere, 95.  
 Rilúcere, 96.  
 Rimanêre, 16.  
 Risôlvere (*dissolve*), *see* sôlvere,  
 107.  
 Risôlvere (*determine*), *see* assôl-  
 vere, 31.  
 Rispôndere, 97.  
 Ristâre, *see* stâre, 4.  
 Risûmere, *see* consûmere, 39.  
 Rôdere, 98.  
 Rômperre, 99.  
 Salîre, 165.  
 Sapêre, 6.  
 Scêgliere, 135.  
 Scêndere, 100.  
 Scêrre, *see* scêglicre, 135.  
 Scîndere, 101.  
 Scîôgliere, 136.  
 Scîôlvere, 102.  
 Scîôrre, *see* scîôgliere, 136.  
 Scommêttère, *see* mêttere, 73.  
 Scopîrre, *see* copîrre, 150.  
 Scôrgere, 103.  
 Scrîvere, 104.  
 Scuôtère, 105.  
 Sdrucîre, 159.  
 Sdruscîre, *see* sdrucîre, 159.  
 Sedêre, 9.

Sodúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.

Segúire, 162.

Sepellíre, *see* seppellíre, 157.

Seppellíre, 157.

Sofferíre, *see* soffríre, 152.

Soffólcere, 106.

Soffríre, 152.

Solére, 14.

Sólvere, 107.

Sopprímere, *see* esprímere, 57.

Soprastáre, *see* stáre, 4.

Sórgere, 108.

Sospêndere, 109.

Sostáre *is* *reg.*

Sottostáre, *see* stáre, 4.

Sovrastáre *see* stáre, 4.

Spándere, 110.

Spárgere, 111.

Sparíre, 163.

Spêgnere, 144.

Spêndere, 112.

Spêngere, *see* spêgnere, 144.

Spêrgere, 113.

Spígnere, *see* spíngere, 145.

Spíngere, 145.

Spórgere, 114.

Stáre, 4.

Strídere, *reg. verb.*, *has no p. p.*

Strígnere, *see* stríngere, 146.

Stríngere, 146.

Strúggere, 115.

Subíre *is* *reg.*: *pres.* subísco.

Succêdere, 116.

Súggere, 117.

Sussístere, *see* esístere, 54.

Svèllere, *see* vèllere, 133.

Tacére, 13.

Têndere (*trans.*), 118.

Têndere (*intrans.*), *reg. verb.*, *h*  
*no p. p.*

Tenére, 17.

Têrgere, 110.

Tígnere, *see* tíngere, 147.

Tíngere, 147.

Tôgliere, 137.

Tôrcere, 120.

Tôrre, *see* tógliere, 137.

Tradúrre, *see* condúrre, 129.

Tráere, *see* trárre, 132.

Transígere, *see* esígere, 53.

Trárre, 132.

Uccídere, 121.

Udíre, 167.

Ūgnere, *see* úngere, 148.

Ūngere, 148.

Uscíre, 168.

Valére, 18.

Vedére, 10.

Vèllere, 133.

Veníre, 166.

Vêrre, *see* vèllere, 133.

Vêrtere, *reg. verb.*, *is used only*  
*the pres. and past descr.*

Vilipêndere, *see* sospêndere, 109

Víncore, 122.

Vívere, 123.

Volére, 19. ✓

Vólgerc, 124.

Vólvere, 125.

# LESSONS AND EXERCISES

## LESSON 1. PRONUNCIATION

*Study sections 1, 2, 3.*

NOTE. — In this and in all other lessons the assignment of a section number means that the *whole* section, including all subdivisions, is to be studied, unless special directions to the contrary are given.

### EXERCISE 1

1. *State the quality of the e (close or open) in each of these words, and pronounce each word:* te, tre, nè, sè, potè, è, dièdi, fièno, Sièna, ésti, débito, Alfrédo, prèsto, mérito, Valério.

2. *State the quality of the o in each of these words, and pronounce each word:* fo, no, canterò, però, muòre, suòna, nói, ricóveri, Róma, dóve, ópera, Mòdena.

3. *Pronounce:* abitúdi*ne*, alfabêto, Alfîeri, altrúi, Amêrica, Amêto, andátevene, animáto, augurerái, balenfo, benedírono, benêvolo, bibliófilo, cavaliêre, colúi, conservatório, contadíno, Costantinópolis, ostúi, crêdulo, cú*i*, demoliréte, Demôstene, Doménico, dóve, éi, Emanuê*le*, erôe, esprimeréte, Faraóne, formidábile, fúi, Galilêo, Goldóni, idêa, impermalíto, impêro, insubordináto, ío, línea, Lombardía, lúi, lunedì, maêstro, miêi, mío, Nápoli, náufrago, nêutro, nobiltà, nuôra, ôde, oibò, onorévole, ortografía, Orviêto, ôvest, Panamà, Páolo, patáta, paúra, perdè, perpendícolo, personalità, pòi, sóvero, responsabilità, restituíti, rimaneváte, Rím*i*ni, Rómolo, Róvere, Seráo, Severíno, suói, Taormína, úm*i*le, úno, vendè, vói, voluntà, vuôto.

## LESSON 2. PRONUNCIATION (continued)

*Study 4 [omitting (a), (b), (c), (d) under s], 5, 6, 7. Read (a), (c) under s in 4, and 8.*

## EXERCISE 2

1. *Pronounce:* cáne, pánca, tásca, cóme, Páscoli, cúra, alcú scúdo, clásse, Têcla, crédo, sácro, ascrívere, che, chetáre, ôc pánche, máschera, chi, chíno, báchi, párchì, bôschì, chiúdo, richián manchiámo, schiávo, Íschia, Peschiêra, céna, celáre, vóce, vivá Nocêra, élce, incêndio, ci, civíle, Cimabúe, dièci, táci, Luo Mèdici, pòrci, Púlci, Vínici, ciárta, diciannôve, óncia, márcia, ciê spêcie, ciò, bácio, commércio, Píncio, ciúrma, fanciúлло, accênde uccéllo, accidênte, piccino, fáccia, bôccia, táccio, picciónè, Dúcc acciúffo, ricciúto, scêna, násce, discêpolo, scíbile, lásci, disciplin sciáme, pòscia, lasciò, mesciúto.

2. *Pronounce:* gála, targa, sgarbáto, págo, válgo, sgómbro, gús auguráre, guárdia, Guído, sângue, glôria, anglomanía, mágro, sg dáre, ghétto, pagherò, álghe, sghémbo, ghirlánda, ghinëa, Ghibêr súghi, Inghiltêrra, ghiánda, ghiótto, paghiámo, Alighiêri, ringhiê geláre, gènere, Gênova, agévole, Eugênio, stringêdo, Angêli sgeláre, giro, agitáto, antología, Perugíno, piángi, cángia, Bôrg giòrno, giovedì, Giovánni, adágio, mángio, giù, giústo, Giúlio, digiú ingiúria, fríggerc, piágge, ôggi, fuggíre, piággia, foggíare, leggiê maggióre, solféggio, Réggio, aggiúnta, raggiustáre, mágli, bégli, tí moglína, medágliá, pigliáre, Cágliari, móglie, cogliêdo, tágl lúglio, pagliúcola, figliuòlo, gli, pugnáre, Campágna, Bológna, spúgn múgnere, compagnía, Mascágni, stágno, sógno, Folígno, ognú piagnucoláre.

3. *Pronounce the words in (a) under s on p. 3; then pronounce these words, in which the s has the sound of English z:* basílic bríndisi, cáso, cáusa, confusióne, desêrto, desináre, elemôsina, ênfá

4. *Pronounce these words, in which the z (or zz) is pronounced k:* ts: grázie, ôzio, Venêzia, Abrúzzi, altézza, Arézzo, mázzo, pózz álzo, calzóni, ánzì, denúnzia, Firênze, Mónza, sênza, fôrza, már zámpa, zío, zólfo; then pronounce the words in (a) under z on p. 4.

5. *Pronounce:* dêbbo, gabbâre, Lécco, pácco, addío, frédđo, ffâre, gôffo, bëllo, Donatêllo, commêdia, sómma, fánno, Ravénna, ppéna, trôppo, arrívo, târra, éssa, Messína, mêtto, ôtto, avveníre.

## LESSON 3. ARTICLES

*Study 9, 10, 11, 12, 14, 15.*

## EXERCISE 3

1. *State the gender and number of each of these combinations, as indicated by the form of the definite article: gli ábiti, il balcóne, i bambíni, la bárba, le immáginì, gl' ímpeti, le scárpe, lo schérzo, li zecchíni; cògli affári, del cámpo, súlla fáccia, ái ládri, dállo còglio, négli státi, délle unióni.*

2. *Place the proper form of the definite article before each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine singular, those in (b) masculine plural, those in (c) feminine singular, those in (d) feminine plural]:*  
 a) álbero, dênte, fátto, impêro, sguárdo, spedále, uccêllo, zíngaro.  
 b) álberi, dênti, fátti, impêri, sguárdi, spedáli, uccêlli, zíngari.  
 c) ária, campána, evoluzióne, mên-te, ómbra, scêna, zampa.  
 d) árie, campáne, evoluzióni, mên-ti, ómbre, scêne, zampe.

3. *Translate into Italian the prepositions and articles in these combinations [the nouns in (a) are masculine singular, those in (b) masculine plural, those in (c) feminine singular, those in (d) feminine plural]: (a) of the ánno, by the effêtto, to the gátto, in the êsto, with the ídolo, on the leóne, with the quádro, in the scúdo, to the spírito, by the umóre, of the zappatóre. (b) of the ánni, by the effêtti, to the gátti, in the gêsti, with the ídoli, on the leóni, with the quádri, in the scúdi, to the spíriti, by the umóri, of the zappatóri. (c) of the ácqua, by the estáte, to the nôtte, in the ôpera, with the scála, on the távola. (d) of the ácque, by the estáti, to the nôtti, in the ôpere, with the scále, on the távole.*

4. *Place the proper form of the indefinite article before each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine, those in (b) are feminine]:*  
 a) idlíio, nóme, oceáno, spêcchio, strído, teátro, uóvo, zòccolo.  
 b) età, maêstra, ónda, spína, úva, vâlle.



## LESSON 4. NOUNS

*Study 17-25 inclusive [omitting (a), (b) under 22, and (a), (b), (d) under 23].*

## EXERCISE 4

1. *State the gender and number of each of these combinations:* animáli, néi caffè, la canzóne, cólla féde, del fucíle, gl' ingégni, lúpi, dagli onóri, le paróle, il poêta, sülle questióni, lo schérzo, á schiôppo.

2. *Give the plural of each of these nouns [those in (a) are masculine, those in (b) are feminine]:* (a) bríndisi, cáne, castêllo, dèspota, doló, líbro, lúme, maêstro, padróne, perícolo, podestà, problêma, uóm, (b) bellézza, bontà, capitále, fónite, lúna, móglie, origine, pólvre, sêrie, síntesi, têrra, vittória.

3. *Give the plural of each of these combinations:* l' ácu, l' artísta (*masculine*), l' ánnio, l' azióne (*feminine*), la barbárie, béstia, il búe, il caváлло, la chiáve, il cuóre, la dáma, il dóre, l' erróre (*m.*), l' êstasi (*f.*), l' età, la fanciúlla, la felicità, fêsta, il fráte, la gênte, il giurí, la gravità, l' idêa, l' inchiôsto, l' istánte (*m.*), il lavóro, la líra, la máno, il máre, la metrópo, il minístro, la morále, délla nazióne, all' oggétto, nell' opinió (*f.*), délla padróna, dal palázzo, súlla pèlle, col prète, dal profè, délla ragázza, al re, dal sánto, súllo scaffále, délla sête, nêl sistêma, nêllo státo, súlla superfície, dell' umóre (*m.*), nêlla vál sul vapóre, délla veritá, cólla virtù.

## LESSON 5. ESSERE

*Study 53 (a) [omitting the compound tenses].*

## EXERCISE 5

1. *Identify (that is, state the person, number, and tense of) and translate these forms:* êrano, saréte, fúmmo, siámo, essêndo, sarêbb, sarémo, fu, sêi, saréste, êra, státo, sarà, siête, sarémmo, eravá, saránno, sóno, fôste, sarêbbero, fúrono.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we<sup>1</sup> are, he will be, they were (*past descriptive*), they were (*past absolute*), I should be, she is, we were (*desc.*), they would be, I was (*abs.*), we shall be, we should be, being, I was (*abs.*), they will be, thou art, you are,<sup>2</sup> thou wast (*desc.*), you were (*desc.*), thou wast (*abs.*), you were (*abs.*), you will be, you would be, to be, been, let us be, be.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> English subject pronouns are to be omitted in translation, until other directions are given.

<sup>2</sup> English verbs which have 'you' as subject are to be translated by second person plural forms, until other directions are given.

<sup>3</sup> English imperatives without an expressed subject are to be translated by second person plural forms, until other directions are given.

## VOCABULARY

giornále, m., *newspaper*.

Giovánni, *John*.

libro, *book*.

pádre, m., *father*.

ragázzo, *boy*.

signóre, m., *gentleman*.

uómo, *man*.

cása, *house, home*.

città, *city*.

dónna, *woman*.

Firênze, f., *Florence*.

mádre, f., *mother*.

María, *Mary*.

Nápoli, f., *Naples*.

pôrta, *door*.

ragázza, *girl*.

Róma, *Rome*.

scrivanía, *desk*.

signóra, *lady*.

távola, *table*.

a, *to, at, in*.<sup>1</sup>

dománi, *tomorrow*.

dóve, *where*.

già, *already*.

iêri, *yesterday*.

là, *there*.

ôggi, *today*.

ôra, *now*.

quándo, *when*.

qui, *here*.

<sup>1</sup> English 'in' is ordinarily to be translated by *in*, but before the name of a city it is to be translated by *a*.

3. *Study these sentences:*<sup>1</sup> 1. Il signóre è il pádre di Giovánni. 2. Dóve siête óra? Sóno qui. 3. Quándo sarà cói signóri? 4. I libri?

<sup>1</sup> The student should enable himself to translate the sentences, to read them aloud in Italian accurately and intelligently, and to translate them without reference to the book when they are read aloud by the instructor.

déi ragázzí êrano súlla távola. 5. Dománi sarémo nélla città. Sarà qui ôggi? 7. La dôнна è già álla pôrta délla cása. 8. Ôr qui: dománi dóve sarà? 9. Il giornále è là, súlla scrivania. Iêri le signóre êrano a Nápoli, ôggi sóno a Róma, dománi saránnu Firênze.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. The lady is Mary's mother. 2. The girls will be here tomorrow. 3. The newspapers were<sup>1</sup> on the table. 4. Where are the boy's books? Are they on the desk? 5. I shall be there with the men. 6. Were<sup>1</sup> you already at the door? 7. Would you be in the house now? 8. John's father is in the city. 9. When will you be in Naples? 10. Today they are here, tomorrow they'll be there.

<sup>1</sup> Use the past descriptive.

## LESSON 6. ADJECTIVES

*Study 26-34 inclusive. Learn the first twelve cardinal numerals, given in 38.*

### EXERCISE 6

1. *Give the feminine singular and the masculine and feminine plural of each of these adjectives:* cattívo, fedéle, fôrte, rósto, sêmplice, véro.

2. *Insert the proper form of bello in each of these phrases:* il — álbero, il — cappêllo, il — fanciúlllo, il — ingégno, il — státo, i — álberi, i — cappêlli, i — fanciúlli, i — ingégni, i — státi.

3. *Place the proper form of Santo before each of these names:* Agostíno, Cárlo, Êlmo, Giovánni, Lorênze.

4. *Insert the proper form of grande in each of these phrases:* un — cappêllo, un — erróre, un — fuòco, un — ingégno, un — státo.

5. *Insert the proper form of buono in each of these phrases:* un — amíco, un — cuòre, un — fanciúlllo, un — ingégno, un — schiòppo.

## VOCABULARY

entro, <i>centre</i> .	francése, <i>French</i> .
fiore, m., <i>flower</i> .	gentile, <i>gentle, polite, kind</i> .
fratello, <i>brother</i> .	gióvane, <i>young</i> .
giardino, <i>garden</i> .	gránde, <i>great, large, big</i> .
tempo, <i>time, weather</i> .	interessánte, <i>interesting</i> .
chiesa, <i>church</i> .	italiáno, <i>Italian</i> .
lezione, f., <i>lesson</i> .	mólto, <i>much</i> ; as adverb, <i>much, very</i> .
sorella, <i>sister</i> .	píccolo, <i>little, small</i> .
stanza, <i>room</i> .	pòvero, <i>poor</i> .
strada, <i>street</i> .	rósso, <i>red</i> .
alto, <i>high, tall</i> .	rotóndo, <i>round</i> .
bello, <i>beautiful, pretty, handsome</i> , <i>fine</i> .	ci, <i>here, there</i> . <sup>1</sup>
facile, <i>easy</i> .	dópo, <i>after, afterward</i> .
felice, <i>happy</i> .	forse, <i>perhaps</i> .
	non, <sup>2</sup> <i>not</i> .

<sup>1</sup> *Ci* is used when the 'here' or 'there' is quite unemphatic, *qui* and *là* when the 'here' or 'there' bears some emphasis. *Ci* is called conjunctive adverb, and its position is governed by special rules. Until other directions are given, it should be placed directly before the verb.

<sup>2</sup> Placed before the verb.

6. *Study these sentences:*<sup>1</sup> 1. *Ci sono déi bei fiori nel piccolo giardino.* 2. *Per i poveri non è facile essere felici.* 3. *La tavola rotonda era nel centro della stanza.* 4. *C'è qualche giornale francese sulla scrivania.* 5. *Le vic di Napoli sono molto interessanti.* 6. *Oggi siete più felice che ieri.* 7. *Le tre signore francesi erano molto gentili.* 8. *La chiesa è più alta della casa.* 9. *Il ragazzo più giovane è il fratello di Maria.* 10. *Domani forse il tempo sarà migliore.*

<sup>1</sup> See the statement on p. 155.

7. *Translate into Italian:*<sup>2</sup> 1. *The big red book is for John's brother.* 2. *He is the happiest of the boys.* 3. *The lesson for tomorrow will*

<sup>2</sup> See the statement on p. 171.

be very easy. 4. The Italian newspaper was<sup>1</sup> on the round table. 5. The largest house is as high as the church. 6. Mary's four sisters will not be here after tomorrow. 7. The boys were<sup>1</sup> more polite when they were younger. 8. Yesterday the weather was fine. The prettiest flowers are in the garden. 10. There are some interesting streets in the centre of the city.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Use the past descriptive.

<sup>2</sup> Write this sentence in two ways, first using the partitive construction, then using *qualche*.

## LESSON 7. AVÈRE

Study 53 (b) [omitting the compound tenses].

### EXERCISE 7

1. *Identify and translate:* avèste, hánno, avréste, avrémo, èssèvi, avèndo, avrà, avúto, avrèbbero, avévano, avréte, abbiánno, èbbero, hái, avránno.

2. *Translate into Italian:* they will have, she had (*past abs.*), should have, I had (*past desc.*), having, we have, thou wilt have, thou have, let us have, you will have, we had (*abs.*), I should have.

3. *Translate:* fúrono, ha, íoste, aveváte, sarà, avéte, essèno, èbbe, siáte, avrémmo, sarèi, avémmo, saréste, avéva.

4. *Translate into Italian:* I am, I have, you are, you have, he has, we were (*desc.*), we had (*desc.*), they were (*desc.*), they had (*desc.*), I was (*abs.*), I had (*abs.*), you were (*abs.*), you had (*abs.*), he was (*abs.*), he had (*abs.*), we shall be, we shall have, they would be, they would have.

### VOCABULARY

álbero, *tree.*

ánno, *year.*

giórno, *day.*

invèrno, *winter.*

mése, m., *month.*

pránzo, *dinner.*

quádro, *picture.*

salòtto, *parlor.*

sólo, m., *sun, sunlight.*

teátro, *theatre.*



matita, *pencil*.  
 pazienza, *patience*.  
 penna, *pen*.  
 rosa, *rose*.  
 settimana, *week*.  
 storia, *history*.  
 caldo, *hot, warm*.  
 freddo, *cold*.  
 importante, *important*.  
 nuovo, *new*.  
 pieno, *full*.

scuro, *dark*.  
 stretto, *narrow*.  
 vero, *true*.  
 benchè, *although*.<sup>1</sup>  
 e, *and*.  
 ma, *but*.  
 o, *or*.  
 poi, *then*.  
 presto, *soon, early*.  
 sempre, *always*.  
 soltanto, *only*.

<sup>1</sup> The verb of the clause introduced by *benchè* is always in the subjunctive.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Avranno soltanto tre o quattro giorni di vacanza a Firenze. 2. La chiesa più interessante era in una via stretta e buia. 3. Il giovane aveva sempre qualche libro italiano sulla scrivania. 4. Benchè le stanze non siano grandi, sono calde e piene di sole. 5. Abbiamo per domani delle lezioni molto facili. 6. Non ho una penna, ma Giovanni ha delle matite. 7. Dopo pranzo le signore andranno nel salotto. 8. Poi avrà delle tavole nuove. 9. Il libro sulla storia importante dei teatri di Napoli. 10. Oggi avrò dei giornali francesi e italiani.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. The trees are much higher than the houses. 2. A year has twelve months, a month has four weeks, and a week has seven days. 3. They have a large house with a beautiful garden. 4. Have patience, they will be here soon. 5. Although the room is small, it will not be cold in the winter. 6. The most beautiful flowers were large red roses. 7. He had ten books on the desk, and seven or eight on the round table. 8. Have you a pen or a good pencil? 9. It is a pretty theatre, it's true, but it isn't very large. 10. The churches of the city were very beautiful; they had many interesting pictures.

## LESSON 8. DEMONSTRATIVES AND INTERROGATIVES

*Study 42, 43.*

## EXERCISE 8

1. Place the proper form of *quello* before each of these nouns: *álbero*, *cappello*, *fanciullo*, *ingegno*, *stato*, *uccello*; *álberi*, *cappelli*, *fanciulli*, *ingegni*, *stati*, *uccelli*.

2. Translate into Italian: who is it? whom have you there? whom are-you-speaking (*parlate*)? what is it? what have you? what are you speaking? what book is that? which book is that? whose book is that? what a beautiful book!

## VOCABULARY

<i>biglietto</i> , ticket.	<i>certo</i> , certain.
<i>cappello</i> , hat.	<i>corto</i> , short.
<i>denaro</i> , money.	<i>difficile</i> , difficult.
<i>fanciullo</i> , child.	<i>fortunato</i> , fortunate.
<i>lavoro</i> , work.	<i>necessario</i> , necessary.
<i>número</i> , number.	<i>ogni</i> , <sup>2</sup> every.
<i>occhiali</i> , m. pl., glasses.	<i>possibile</i> , possible.
<i>studente</i> , m., student.	<i>pronto</i> , ready.
	<i>verde</i> , green.
<i>foglia</i> , leaf.	
<i>gita</i> , trip, excursion.	<i>come</i> , as, like.
<i>mano</i> , f., hand.	<i>finalmente</i> , finally, at last.
<i>mattina</i> , morning.	<i>lunedì</i> , Monday.
<i>Milano</i> , f., <sup>1</sup> Milan.	<i>se</i> , if. <sup>3</sup>
<i>poesia</i> , poem, poetry.	<i>sì</i> , yes.
<i>Venezia</i> , Venice.	<i>troppo</i> , too, too much.

<sup>1</sup> Names of cities are regarded as feminine, whatever the ending.

<sup>2</sup> Invariable.

<sup>3</sup> The verb of the clause introduced by *se* is present *indicative* if the tense is present, past *subjunctive* if the tense is past.

3. Study these sentences: 1. *Queste foglie sono più belle di quelle fiori.* 2. *Ho dei giornali e dei libri: questi sono per le signore, que-*

per i signóri. 3. Ciò è possíbile, ma non è cërto. 4. Chi ha un pádre cóme quéllo è móltó fortunáto. 5. Chi è? È quéllo studénte francése. 6. Che còsa avéte in quéllo máno? Déi bigliétti per una gíta a Venêzia. 7. Quále è il nùmero délla cása di quel signóre? 8. Quále lezióne éra la piú diffícile? 9. Quánti quádri in quel salóto! 10. Di chi è quel cappéllo vérde?

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. What handsome children! Who are they? 2. Those poems are shorter than this one. 3. How much money would he have then? 4. At last he has what is necessary for the work. 5. These boys are here every morning. 6. Are you ready? Have you those tickets? 7. Which churches are more interesting, those of Venice or those of Milan? 8. That red is pretty. Yes, if it isn't too dark for the room. 9. How many will be here Monday? More than ten or twelve? 10. Whose glasses are these? Are they John's?

## LESSON 9. THE FIRST CONJUGATION

*Study 58, 59 [omitting (a), (b)], 62, 63 [omitting (a)-(d)], the first sentence of 75, and the first sentence of 77 (a).*

### EXERCISE 9

1. *Identify and translate:* parlò, parleréte, párli, parláste, parláte, parliámo, parlerêi, parlerái, párlino, parlerà, parlái, parlávano.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I spoke, she would speak, we were speaking, I shall speak, they spoke, speak, let us speak, let him speak, speaking, they speak, we should speak, he spoke.

### VOCABULARY

baúle, m., *trunk*.  
esáme, m., *examination*.  
forestiére, m., *foreigner*.  
guánto, *glove*.  
moménto, *moment*.  
palázzo, *palace*.  
páne, m., *bread*.

paniére, m., *basket*.  
poêta, m., *poet*.

chiáve, f., *key*.  
gallería, *gallery*.  
stazióne, f., *station*.  
università, *university*.

amàre, *to love.*

aspettâre, *to wait, wait for.*

cantâre, *to sing.*

comprâre, *to buy.*

costâre, *to cost.*

desiderâre, *to desire.*

entrâre, *to enter, go in, come in.*

guardâre, *to look, look at, watch.*

lavorâre, *to work.*

passâre, *to pass.*

telefonâre, *to telephone.*

tornâre, *to come back, return.*

trovâre, *to find.*

visitâre, *to visit.*

3. *Translate:* compriâmo, costerêbbe, entrâva, tornerà, desiderâte, trovâste, entrerànnò, amerêbbero, tórni, trovâto, trovâmo, comprâmmo, guârdà, guardâi, amârono, trovândo, telefonâmo, lavorerêste, aspêttano, cântino.

4. *Translate into Italian:* it will cost, I waited, buying, they would watch, she came in, they returned, I should telephone, he loved, sing, we found, let him work.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Comprerò un baùle, se non còsto trôppo. 2. Quândo ci entrâmmo, guardâvano quel bël quâdro dègli âlberi. 3. Quânto còstano quèsti guânti? 4. Se non lavorâsse, non passerêbbe gli esâmi. 5. Parlâva dèlle poesie quel poëta francése. 6. Lunedì visitâmmo l'università di Nâpo. 7. Che còsa cantâvano quèi ragâzzi nêlla vîa? 8. Aspêtti quel mómènto: non sòno prònto. 9. Non entrò nel palâzzo, benci avêsse le chiâvi. 10. Chi più ha, più desidera.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Look at<sup>1</sup> that girl with the basket full of roses. 2. They were waiting for<sup>1</sup> that foreigner. 3. You will find some<sup>2</sup> interesting pictures in that gallery. 4. Did you telephone to that French gentleman? 5. With whom did you come back from the station? 6. I went in, although he was working. 7. Let's wait for<sup>1</sup> John: he will be here soon. 8. Let him buy the bread, and then come back. 9. Where did she find those keys? 10. If I find the money, I'll telephone.

<sup>1</sup> Do not use a preposition after an Italian verb which may be itself equivalent to an English verb and preposition.

<sup>2</sup> Use *qualche*.

## LESSON 10. RELATIVES AND POSSESSIVES

*Study 44 [omitting (a), (b), (c)], 45 [omitting (a)–(e)], 59 (a). Read 4 (a), (b), (c) 59 (b), 63 (a), (b), (c).*

## EXERCISE 10

1. *Insert the proper relative pronoun in each of these phrases:* il ragázso — è qui, i libri — trovái, i ragázzí con — tornái, il libro — párló, i libri — sóno sùlla távola, il ragázso — cercavámo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* my garden, his house, our books, your pencils, their garden, my house, her books, our pencils, your garden, their house, my books, his pencils, our garden, your house, their books.

## VOCABULARY

ugíno, *cousin*.  
mercáto, *market*.  
ombréllo, *umbrella*.  
pittóre, m., *painter*.  
románzo, *novel*.

finêstra, *window*.  
fotografía, *photograph*.  
mela, *apple*.  
pera, *pear*.  
testa, *head*.

giallo, *yellow*.  
modérno, *modern*.  
tutto, *all*.  
último, *last, latest*.

arriváre, *to arrive*.  
bisognáre,<sup>1</sup> *to be necessary*.  
cercáre, *to seek, search, look for, try*.  
cominciáre, *to begin*.  
mangiáre, *to eat*.  
menáre, *to lead, take*.  
pagáre, *to pay*.  
portáre, *to carry, bring*.  
studiáre, *to study*.

bène, *well*.  
ecco, *here is, here are, there is, there are*.<sup>2</sup>  
perchè, *why, because*.  
stamáne, *this morning*.  
súbito, *at once*.

<sup>1</sup> Impersonal.

<sup>2</sup> When 'there is,' 'there are,' are quite unemphatic (as in 'There are some pretty flowers in the garden'), or when the 'is' or 'are' is emphatic (as in 'There are men who don't believe it'), they are to be translated by *c'è* or *ci sono*. When the 'there' is emphatic (as in 'There is John') they are to be translated by *ecco*. 'Here is,' 'here are,' are always to be translated by *ecco*. *C'è* and *ci sono* correspond to the French *il y a*; *ecco* to the French *voici* and *voulà*.



3. *Give all the forms of pagare in which an h is inserted.*

4. *Translate into Italian:* I search, we search, let him search, I shall search; I pay, we pay, let him pay, I shall pay; I begin, we begin, let him begin, I shall begin; I eat, we eat, let him eat, I shall eat; I study, we study, let him study, I shall study.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. È un uòmo che trôva súbito quel che cerca. 2. C' erano all' última finêstra due signóri, úno déi quáli era quel forestiêre con cûi parlái iêri. 3. Il palázzo che visitámmo stamáne è úno déi più interessáti délla città. 4. La lóro sorêlla portáva súlla têsta un gran paniêre giállo piêno di méle e di pére. 5. Mangerémo quel che troverémo, e pagherémo bêne. 6. Il quádro che guardávano nel salótto è di úno déi nóstri miglióri pittóri italiáni modèrni. 7. Ecco quel signóre. Perchè desidêra parlâre âi vòstri fratèlli? 8. Che bèi fióri! Sóno tútti del vòstro giardíno? 9. La vía più strétta è quèlla che ména dálla chiêsa di San Giovánni al mercáto. 10. Bisognáva aspettâre María, che cercáva l' ombrêllo.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Who is the tall gentleman who arrived this morning? 2. Which of the lessons that you studied yesterday is the easiest? 3. This novel is more interesting than the one that he brought from the city. 4. My glasses are larger and rounder than his. 5. What are you looking for? Those tickets that I bought this morning. 6. Here is the umbrella I found at the door the day that you were here. Is it yours? 7. Whose is that poem of which they were speaking? 8. There are the men they were waiting for: why don't they begin? 9. Which of those three trunks is yours? This one, the largest. 10. Here is what he brought, — what is it? It's the latest photograph of my cousin.

## LESSON 11. THE SECOND AND THIRD CONJUGATIONS

*Study 60.*

### EXERCISE 11

1. *Identify and translate:* credè, crederéte, crêda, crederò, credéste, credéte, credètti, credíamo, credcrêi, credêttero, crederái, credéi, crederà, credévano, crederémo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I believed, she would believe, we were believing, believe, they believed, let us believe, let him believe, believing, they believe, we should believe, he believed, you believe.

## VOCABULARY

bottóne, m., *button*.

caffè, m., *coffee*.

fèrro, *iron*.

lúme, m., *light*.

onóre, m., *honor*.

servitóre, m., *servant*.

battáglia, *battle*.

côsa, *thing*.

fráse, f., *sentence*.

preghiêra, *prayer, entreaty*.

salúte, f., *health*.

tórre, f., *tower*.

vílla, *villa*.

vísta, *sight, view*.

víta, *life*.

vólta, *time*.<sup>1</sup>

godére, *to enjoy*.

temére, *to fear, be afraid*.

báttere, *to beat, strike*.

cêdere, *to yield*.

combáttere, *to fight*.

crêdere, *to believe, think*.

pêrdere, *to lose*.

prêmere, *to press*.

ricêvere, *to receive, get*.

ripêtere, *to repeat*.

ancóra, *yet, still, again, even*.

che, *conjunction, that*.

fuorchè, *except*.

mêglio, *better*.

mêntre, *while*.

<sup>1</sup> 'Time' is ordinarily to be translated by *têmpo*; but when it has the sense of 'occasion' (as in 'three or four times') it is to be translated by *vólta*.

3. *Translate:* battiámo, teméva, perderà, godéte, ricevêi, cedêtero, combattè, premêndo, ripêta, cederêbbe, ricevêste, goderánno, perderêbbero, témano, perdúto, perdúti, temémmo, combátte, perdérono, ricévono.

4. *Translate into Italian:* he will lose, I enjoyed, fearing, they would beat, she received, let them yield, they fought, repeat, they are pressing.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Ôggi è felice: riceverà il denáro per quel quádro délla signóra cói guánti. 2. Benchè combattêssero bêne, perdêtero la battáglia, e mólti perdêtero la víta. 3. Avrêmo quel che bisógna, non teméte. 4. Non ho ricevúto ancóra le mîe fotografíe.

5. Ripetévano ancóra quel che avévano già ripetúto mólte vólte. 6. Non ho studiáto la lezióne: iêri perdéi i miêi líbri. 7. Se non tornásse, perderêbbe ógni còsa. 8. Credéva che fósse mêglio êssere temúto che amáto. 9. Tútto è perdúto fuorchè l' onóre. 10. Bisógna báttire il férro méntre è cáldo.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. She pressed a button, and the servant came in with the coffee. 2. The students had to (a) repeat the sentence three or four times. 3. The trees were losing the last red and yellow leaves. 4. If I receive the money, I'll telephone at once to my father. 5. Finally she came back and repeated that *dria* from the *Trovatóre* (m.). 6. Although she is still young, she does not enjoy good health. 7. That room has only one small window, but it gets light from the parlor. 8. From their villa they enjoy a beautiful view of the towers of the city. 9. If he doesn't yield to their entreaties, he won't yield to mine. 10. They think that he is<sup>1</sup> even poorer than his cousin.

<sup>1</sup> Use the subjunctive.

## LESSON 12. CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS

*Study 46, 47 [omitting 3 and (a)], 48 [omitting (a), (b), (d), (e), and (f), but including (c)].*

### EXERCISE 12

1. *Translate into Italian:* he finds me, he finds thee, he finds him, he finds her, he finds it (m.), he finds it (f.), he finds us, he finds you, he finds them (m.), he finds them (f.); I find myself, thou findest thyself, he finds himself, she finds herself, we find ourselves, you find yourself, you find yourselves, they (m.) find themselves, they (f.) find themselves; we find each other, you find each other, they find each other; to find him, finding him, let us find him, find him, do not find him, finding himself.

2. *Translate into Italian:* he speaks to me, he speaks to thee, he speaks to him, he speaks to her, he speaks to us, he speaks to you, he speaks to them (m.), he speaks to them (f.); I speak to myself, thou

speakest to thyself, he speaks to himself, she speaks to herself, we speak to ourselves, you speak to yourself, you speak to yourselves, they (*m.*) speak to themselves, they (*f.*) speak to themselves; we speak to each other, you speak to each other, they speak to each other; to speak to him, speaking to him, let us speak to him, let's not speak to him, speak to him, speaking to himself.

3. *Translate:* lo trovái, le párlano, mi parlerèbbe, ripetételo, vi aspettávano, li compráste?, cediámo lóro, la guardávano?, gli telefonerò, si trovò, lo perdémmo, cercátela, le ricevérono, lo perdétte, trovárvi, ci visiteránno, ci visiterémo, teméndoli, non le parláte, si cêda, vi telefonò, studiámolo, si cêcano, comprátolo, li portáte.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Se non mi trováte qui, aspettátemi cói pigliétti álla pòrta délla stazióne. 2. Che còsa cêca? Le chiávi di quel baúle. Le trovò iêri, pòi le perdétte ancóra. 3. Si ripetévano le frási délla lezióne. 4. Che ragázzo! Compráre cinque méle, e mangiárle súbito! 5. Quánto gli costerèbbe un cappêllo còme quéllo? 6. Parláva còme se ci fósse státo. 7. Quándo riceverò il denáro, vi pagherò. 8. Di che còsa le parláva nel salòtto? 9. Dóve ci ména? Álla chiêsa di cú vi parlò quel pittóre. 10. Êcco quell' ombrêllo: teméva che lo avésse perdúto.

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. When he came back from the market, he brought me some<sup>1</sup> apples. 2. When will she begin to (*a*) sing to them? 3. If you study the lesson, you will find it easy. 4. If he had them, he would bring them to my father. 5. When they came in, he was beginning to (*a*) eat it. 6. Here are the books I lost yesterday. Who found them? 7. We were here this morning, but she did not receive us. 8. I waited for them three days in Naples. 9. Now that you have it again, don't lose it. 10. Whose photograph is this? It's of my cousin. I received it yesterday.

<sup>1</sup> Use the partitive construction.

## LESSON 13. CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS (continued)

*Study 46-50 inclusive.*

## EXERCISE 13

1. *Translate each of these phrases in two ways:* gliélo pôrto, gliélo pôrto, gliéli pôrto, gliéle pôrto, gliéne párlo, portáteglielo, parlátegliene.

2. *Translate into Italian:* he leads him to me, he leads him to thee, he leads him to him, he leads him to her, he leads him to us, he leads him to you, he leads him to them; he leads her to me, he leads her to thee, he leads her to him, he leads her to her, he leads her to us, he leads her to you, he leads her to them; he leads them (*m.*) to me, he leads them to thee, he leads them to him, he leads them to her, he leads them to us, he leads them to you, he leads them to them; he leads them (*f.*) to me, he leads them to thee, he leads them to him, he leads them to her, he leads them to us, he leads them to you, he leads them to them.

3. *Translate into Italian:* he speaks of it to me, he speaks of it to thee, he speaks of it to him, he speaks of it to her, he speaks of it to us, he speaks of it to you, he speaks of it to them.

4. *Translate into Italian:* I repeat it to myself, thou repeat it to thyself, he repeats it to himself, she repeats it to herself, we repeat it to ourselves, you repeat it to yourself, you repeat it to yourselves, they repeat it to themselves; we repeat it to each other, you repeat it to each other, they repeat it to each other.

## VOCABULARY

automôbile, *m., automobile.*  
compliménto, *compliment.*  
ritârdo, *delay; in ritârdo, late.*  
trêno, *train.*

nôtte, *f., night.*  
occsióne, *f., occasion.*  
ôra, *hour.*

cortesía, *courtesy.*  
lira, *lira, coin worth about 20 cents.*

âltro, *other.*  
stéssso, *same.*  
vénti, *twenty.*



chiámáre, to call; cóme si chiáma?	mostráre, to show.
what is the name of?	presentáre, to present.
domandáre, to ask. <sup>1</sup>	prestáre, to lend.
contráre, to meet.	raccontáre, to narrate, tell, tell about. <sup>1</sup>
segnáre, to teach.	ringraziáre, to thank.
sciáre, to leave, let. <sup>2</sup>	spiegáre, to explain.
mandáre, to send.	

<sup>1</sup> The personal object of *domandáre* or *raccontáre* is indirect: *gli domandái*, 'I asked him'; *le raccontái*, 'I told her.'

<sup>2</sup> *Lasciáre* is to be used in translating 'let' only when the idea is one of permission rather than one of command. For example, if 'let him speak' really means 'I command that he speak,' it is to be translated *párlu*; if it really means 'allow him to speak,' it is to be translated *lasciátelo parláre*.

5. *Translate*: *vi aspétto, ne cercáva, ce lo cantárono, ne parláste, non ne avrébbe, êccoli, portándoglielo, ripetéteglielo, gliéne parlerò, m'insogna portárglielo, êccola, ce li cedétte, portiámoglicene, me le mandò?, gliélo prestái, ve lo spiegheránno, mandátemeli, gliélo restino, mi si presénta, gli si preséntano, se lo preséntano, lo mostrái lóro, ve ne mandárono?, me lo spièghi, gliélo presteréte?*

6. *Study these sentences*: 1. Quell' ombréllo éra il súo, e stamáne gliélo mandái. 2. Se non credésse quel che gli raccontámmo, non gliélo ripeterébbe. 3. Cominciáva a domandárgli perchè ne avésse parláto ágli álttri. 4. Ve lo spiegherà quándo gli si presenterà úna bona ocasióne. 5. Lo ringraziái délla cortesía, e gli raccontái tutto. 6. Ogni vólta che s' incóntrano, si ripêtono gli stéssi compliménti. 7. Cóme si chiáma quel giòvane che v' inségna il francése? Il trêno éra in ritárdo, e l' aspettárono un' óra e piú. 9. Óra lasciáteli studiáre; parlerémo dópo. 10. Ho a pagáre súbito, e non ho úna líra: Giovánni ha ricevúto óggi vénti líre, non è véro?<sup>1</sup> Me presterébbe diéci?

<sup>1</sup> *non è vero?* 'hasn't he?'

7. *Translate into Italian*: 1. He is in the garden. Call him — they are looking for him. 2. He presented himself to me yesterday. I believe him even younger than the others. 3. Where are my pencils? didn't I leave them on the desk? 4. If he loses it, it will

cost him twenty *lire*. 5. It is necessary to<sup>1</sup> watch them day and night. 6. He has a French automobile, and he'll show it to Monday. 7. Whose tickets are those? Are they your cousin's? Why don't you send them to him? 8. If I didn't believe what she told me, I wouldn't repeat it to you. 9. If he receives that money he will pay me at once. 10. If she finds this lesson too difficult, she will explain it to her tomorrow.

<sup>1</sup> No preposition is used between *bisognare* and a dependent infinitive.

## LESSON 14. THE FOURTH CONJUGATION

### Study 61.

### EXERCISE 14

1. *Identify and translate:* finì, finiréte, finiscono, finirò, finiste, finivano, finii, finiranno, finirèi, finisci, finirono, finirai, finite, finiremo, finisca, finivo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I finished, she would finish, we were finishing, he is finishing, finish, they finished, let us finish, finishing, they finish, we should finish, he finished, you finish, let him finish.

### VOCABULARY

autunno, *autumn*.

colore, *m., color*.

pericolo, *danger*.

spedale, *m., hospital*.

vento, *wind*.

vestito, *dress*.

cúra, *care*.

stôffa, *stuff, goods*.

cattivo, *bad*.

chiáro, *clear, bright*.

tánto, *so much*.<sup>1</sup>

applaudire, *to applaud*.

avvertire, *to warn*.

capire, *to understand*.

divertire, *to amuse*.

dormire, *to sleep*.

ferire, *to wound*.

fuggire, *to flee*.

garantire, *to guarantee*.

partire, *to depart, leave*.<sup>2</sup>

preferire, *to prefer*.

restituire, *to give back*.

sentire, *to feel, hear*.

servire, *to serve*.

<sup>1</sup> 'So much' is to be translated by *tánto*; not by the separate words for 'so' and 'much.'

<sup>2</sup> When 'leave' is transitive, it is to be translated by *lasciare*; when intransitive, by *partire*.

Iméno, *at least*.  
 avéce, *instead*.  
 nondiméno, *nevertheless*.  
 ríma di, *before*.

sénza, *without*.  
 stanòtte, *last night*.  
 staséra, *this evening*.  
 súbito che, *as soon as*.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'As soon as' is to be translated by *súbito che*; not by the separate words for 'as' and 'soon.'

3. Give the present indicative of each of these verbs: capíre, divertíre, dormíre, fuggíre, garantíre, preferíre.

4. Translate: dormiámo, capirèbbe, servíva, avvertirà, applaudíte, garantíscono, divêrte, fuggírono, ferísce, servèndo, preferímmo, fuggíi, avvertíto, feríte, preferirèbbero, divêrtono, sentísti, serviámo, sènta, capíscono.

5. Translate into Italian: he will amuse, I was sleeping, fleeing, they prefer, we understood, she served, they will applaud, you fled, I should guarantee, sleep.

6. Study these sentences: 1. Súbito che me ne parlò, capíi che l'avéva perdúto. 2. Se ci sêrve bène, le pagherémo vénti líre la settimana. 3. Gliélo restituiránno súbito che tórna. 4. L' avvertíi che c' éra perícolo, ma partì nondiméno. 5. Se si divêrtono óra invéce di lavoráre, dománi avránno a lavoráre invéce di divertírsi. 6. Avéva cantáto mólto bène, e tútti l' applaudívano. 7. Che vénto stanòttel! Lo sentísti? 'Sì, non dormíi un' óra in tútta la nòtte. 8. Il feríto fu portáto állo spedále. 9. Partírono sénza ringraziárci, poenchè avéssimo cercáto tánto di divertírli. 10. Il mése cominciò con úna settimana di bël tèmpo — giòrni chiári e cáldi — ma finì con dièci giòrni frèddi e scúri.

7. Translate into Italian: 1. If he doesn't guarantee it for a year at least, we won't buy it. 2. Although he heard them speak, he fled like the wind. 3. I explained it to him with much care, but he doesn't understand it yet. 4. If he is still sleeping, he won't finish that lesson. 5. The trees are losing the last leaves: the autumn is ending, and the winter is beginning. 6. Did you hear what he told them? 7. This room is warm, but in the parlor we felt the cold. 8. We shall leave this evening if the weather isn't

too bad. 9. What goods and what color does she prefer for dress? 10. When will you finish that work? I shall not have time to (*dì*) finish it before Monday.

## LESSON 15. DISJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS

### Study 51.

### EXERCISE 15

1. *Translate into Italian, expressing the subject pronouns lui, lei, and loro for the third person*: I am, thou hast, he speaks, she fears, we finish, you feel, they are, I had, thou didst enter, yielded, she understood, we slept, you were, they had, I shall part, thou wilt receive, he will guarantee, she will depart, we shall go, you will have, they will enter.

### VOCABULARY

avvocato, lawyer.  
bicchiere, m., glass.  
facchino, porter.  
latte, m., milk.  
mezzogiorno, noon.

aria, air.  
lettera, letter.  
libertà, liberty, freedom.  
moglie, f., wife.  
soggiola, chair.  
valigia, valise, bag.

aiutare, to help.  
restare, to stay.

accanto a, beside.  
contro, contro di,<sup>1</sup> against.  
davanti a, in front of.  
dietro, dietro a,<sup>1</sup> behind.  
secondo, according to.

avanti, forward; come in.<sup>2</sup>  
così, so.  
eh, eh.  
mai, ever, never; non . . . mai  
never.  
nemmeno, non . . . nemmeno  
not even.  
perfettamente, perfectly.  
prima, first.

<sup>1</sup> The compound form is used before a disjunctive pronoun, simple form in other cases.

<sup>2</sup> As an exclamation.

<sup>3</sup> When *mai* (meaning 'never') or *nemmeno* follows the verb, *non* is placed before the verb.

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Portáte a quèsto signóre un caffè, e a me un bicchière di látte. 2. Se lóro ce l' hánno raccontáto a nói, perché non gliélo racconterémmo nói a lúi? 3. Felíci vói, che godéte quell' ária e quèlla libertà, méntre ío rêsto qui in città a lavoráre cóme un facchíno! 4. Chi è? Sóno ío. Chi, ío? Ío, Giovánni. Siéte vói, éh? avánti. 5. Se non gliélo spièga bène, gli è che non lo capísce bène nemméno lúi. 6. A quel teátro me non mi ci troveréte náí piú. 7. Pórta sèmpre con sè úna valígia tútta pièna di líbri, ma nói non ne guárda nemméno úno. 8. Lúi le parláva cóntro di me — e ío avévo lavoráto tánto per lúi! 9. Quándo entrái, lèi éra qui; accánto a lèi, Giovánni, che le parláva di sè stéssó, cóme sèmpre; e lavánti a lúi, in quèsta sèggiola, la píccola sorèlla di lèi, che guardáva óra l' úno óra l' áltra. 10. Quándo lo perdéi, lóro mi aiutárono a cercálo.

3. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They spoke of it to us, to you, and to him. 2. If it's he, call him, and show him that letter. 3. I myself telephoned to you, and asked you if he would arrive there before noon. 4. I think that you will receive it tomorrow. 5. If *you* were here with them, they would be perfectly happy. 6. If he stays, they will leave. 7. He was speaking to us, but we thought that he was speaking to them. 8. He and his cousin left before us, but we arrived there an hour before them. 9. According to him, she was staying at home because the weather was so bad. 10. The lawyer's wife came in first; then, behind her, the two girls; behind them, three porters with the trunks; and finally the lawyer himself.

## LESSON 16. COMPOUND TENSES

*Study the compound tenses in 53 (a) and 53 (b), 54 [omitting (c)-(h)] 55, 56, and the second sentence in 75.*

### EXERCISE 16

1. *Identify and translate:* ho trováto, avéva trováto, ebbe trováto, avrémo trováto, avréste trováto; sóno trováto, éra trováto, fu trováto, sarémo trováti, sarèbbero trováti; sóno státo trováto, éra státo trováto, sarémo státi trováti, saréste státo trováto; sóno tornáto, éra



tornáto, fu tornáto, sarémo tornáti, saréste tornáti; mi sóno divertíto, si éra divertíto, ci sarémo divertíti, si sarèbbero divertíti.

2. *Translate each of these phrases in six ways (as true reflexive, masculine and feminine; as substitute for the passive, masculine, feminine and neuter; and as indefinite):* si presênta, si trôva, si servì, si perde.

3. *Translate each of these phrases in three ways: (as true reflexive, as reciprocal, and as substitute for the passive):* si capíscono, si chiamano, si trovárono.

4. *Translate:* l' hánno avúto, c' éra státo, l' avrò cominciáto, avrèbbe telefonáto, siête feríto, vi siête feríto, vi fúrono trováti, saránno restitúti, gli si restituiránno, sarémmo presentáti lóro, è spiegáto, gli si spiêga, gli è státo spiegáto, gli si è spicgáto, ci siá spiegáti, ce lo siámo spicgáti, si érano incontráti, siámo arriváti, fu mostráto, gli si presenterà, le éra státo raccontáto, le si éra raccontáto, si è presentáta, si sóno presentáte, li avrèbbe aspettáti, ci ha capíto, ci avévano ringraziáti, si éra perdúto, érano fuggíti, si è feríto, vi sóno arriváti, ci érano státi mandáti, ci si érano mandáti, vi avéva aiutáto, essêndo temúto, ci si spiêga, gliélo avéva raccontáto, vi avrémmo ringraziáto.

5. *Translate into Italian:* we have found you, we have been there, they had had it, he will have eaten it, we should have sent it to you, he had<sup>1</sup> arrived, they are received,<sup>2</sup> they would have presented themselves to us, you would have found each other, they have come in, he had left them, they would have<sup>1</sup> fled, it has been told to me.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

<sup>2</sup> Translate this phrase in two ways.

6. *Study these sentences:* 1. Sóno cêrto che se ci fósse státo cò altri, ce ne avrèbbe parláto. 2. Perchè non ha cominciáto a cercá quel che perdêtte? 3. Quándo lóro saránno tornáti, nói sarémo partiti. 4. Non li avrà finíti prima di dománi. 5. Non ha mai visitáto quel giardíno? Gliéne abbíamo parláto tante vólte. 6. Le sêggiole che mi si mostrávano érano móltto bèle, e le avrèi comperáte se avéssi avúto il denáro. 7. Mi si éra raccontáto che lui fósse státo, ma non l' avévo credúto. 8. Se hánno ricevúto la s

ettera, saránno già partíti per la città. 9. Lúi avéva temúto che edéssero álle nòstre preghiêre. 10. Si mángia a mèzzogiórno, e n' óra dópo si tórna al lavóro.

7. *Translate into Italian:* 1. If he had had any, he would have sent some. 2. Being called, I entered, and found myself where I had been the day before. 3. That bag that he had lost has been given back to him. 4. Let him explain to her why they hadn't telephoned to her. 5. I would have sent it to you if I had found it. 6. As soon as he had called them, he came back into the house. 7. When I arrived, they had<sup>1</sup> already left. 8. If they had begun them, they would have finished two or three of them. 9. He told me that he had<sup>1</sup> arrived there before the others. 10. I should have preferred a room with at least two windows.

<sup>1</sup> Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

## LESSON 17. REVIEW

### EXERCISE 17

1. *Pronounce Exercise A on p. 150.*
2. *Give the plural of each of these combinations:* all' avvocato gentile, che bèl salòtto!, col lóro fratèllo, dálla súa bèlla máno, quell' uòmo felice, il gran baúle, il mío cugíno, il poêta francése, il fio bèll' ombrèllo, la città modérna, la giòvane móglie, l' áltra finestra, lo stéssu ragázzo, nell' università nuòva, quále stánza?, quel nuòn pádre, quéllo studênte italiáno, quel píccolo caffè, quel servitóre fedéle, quèsta lezióne diffícile, súlla tórre álta.
3. *Translate:* se lúi ci aiutásse, êrano státi amáti, aspettándole, avevámo, ne avrái, li hánnu battúti, si capísce, lo cedémmo lóro, o cómprano, si êrano divertíti, ci entrárono, se lóro non ci fóssero, incentrárono, gliélo mandái, lúi lo mangerà, ve ne avévo parláto, chi li perdétte?, che còsa preferirêbbe lèi?, se lo premésse, ci sarêi restáto, le telefonávo, lasciátolo, benchè ci capísca, ve lo restituirà, non l' hánnu ricevúta, ripetéteglielo, vi sarêste, gliélo restitufi, non li cêdano, siête chiamáto, se lo spiegheránno, sóno státi ricevúti, gli è restitúto, le sarà spiegáto, si è perdúto, ve lo manderánno,

gliéli avrêbbero mostráti, se vi avéssero sentíto, la sêrvano, ben lo témano, lúi li avvertì, non gliéne parláte, ce lo spiegárono, g êrano presentáti.

4. *Translate into Italian:* there they are, we shall be there, they should buy it, they would carry it to him, he will appraise them, I feared it, are they fighting there?, they are not fleeing, they should have gone in, they would have had it, did he have any, although they had lost it, will they pay me?, I should prefer what he has received?, wait for us.

5. *Study these proverbs:*<sup>1</sup> 1. A ógni uccêllo súdo nído è bêllo. Buóna compagna, mêmza la vía. 3. Chi cêrca, trôva. 4. Chi dôrme non píglia pésci. 5. Chi ha fioríni trôva cugini. 6. Chi lavóra non mángia. 7. Chi s' aiúta, il ciêl l' aiúta. 8. Chi t' arríva, mále allôggia. 9. Gli assênti han sêmpre tórto. 10. Il bô vino non ha bisógno di frásca. 11. Il pássso piú dúro è quêllo d' l' úscio. 12. La fáme non ha légge. 13. La fíne coróna l' óppa. 14. La nôtte pórta consígljo. 15. L' auróra indôra. 16. L' età póssénno. 17. Mêgljo tárdi che mái. 18. Non v' è rôsa sênza spígljo. 19. Ôggi a me, dománi a te. 20. Scópa nuôva scópa bênc.

<sup>1</sup> Many of the sentences from this point on contain words not given in the preceding vocabularies. See the statements on pp. 155 and 156.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Whose ideas are those? They are not yours, I hope. 2. If you hadn't told it to me yourself, I should have believed it. 3. If you haven't the money, I'll lend it to you with pleasure. 4. I was afraid that you were<sup>1</sup> wrong, but according to my cousin's letter you are right. 5. How many times has he repeated it to you? 6. Whom are they calling? I thought that they were<sup>1</sup> all here. 7. He was studying there at the desk, and didn't even look at them when they came in. 8. Although there are not many churches here, they are more interesting than those we visited yesterday. 9. Why didn't he let us go in? Probably because it was too early. 10. Who was it that telephoned to you? The gentleman to whom I telephoned this morning. He is going back tomorrow to Venice.

<sup>1</sup> Use the subjunctive.

## LESSON 18. THE MODERN POLITE FORM OF DIRECT ADDRESS

*Study 52.*

### EXERCISE 18

1. *Translate in two ways (as third person feminine, and as used in direct address):* lêi è qui, con lêi, la chiamávano, chiámo lêi, le parlerò, è cêrta, è restáta, lêi cantáva, dópo di lêi, la ringrázio, guarávano lêi, le telefonerêi, sarà fortunáta, si è divertíta.

2. *Translate in three ways (as third person masculine, as third person feminine, and as used in direct address):* êra là, l' aiuterò, gliélo mandái, si trôva, se lo ripête, pârli, mi pârli, è gentíle, il súo líbro, studiáva, l' incontrái, gliénc ha parláto, si divêrte, cêda, si spiêghi, êra giòvane, i suòi occhiáli.

3. *Translate in two ways (as third person, and as used in direct address):* sóno qui, lóro êrano prónti, cóntro di lóro, li chiamáva, le incontrái, riceverò lóro, parlerò lóro, si tróvano, se lo ripêtono, pârlino, mi pârlino, sóno cêrti, êrano entráte, il lóro trêno.

4. *Replace these phrases by the corresponding phrases in modern polite usage, supposing one person to be addressed:* sarête qui, vói ci capíte, secóndo vói, vi troverò, cercávo vói, vi applaudívano, ve lo prêsto, vi siête feríto, ve lo ripetêste, guardáte, sentítemi, il vôstro ombrêllo.

5. *Replace the phrases in section 4 by the corresponding phrases in modern polite usage, supposing two men to be addressed.*

NOTE. — In the remainder of this exercise, and in all the following exercises, use only the modern polite form of direct address, and suppose the English 'you' to be singular, unless there is some indication that it refers to more than one person.

6. *Translate into Italian:* you are working, you will sing, for you, I'm waiting for you, I will serve you, he will telephone to you, I was speaking to you, did he send it to you?, you were explaining yourself, did you repeat it to yourself?, stay, thank him, you are happy, you have returned, your brother.

7. *Translate the first five sentences in Ex. 14, section 6, and first five in Ex. 16, section 6, supposing them to be used in direct address.*

8. *Translate into Italian the first five sentences in Ex. 15, section 6, and the first five in Ex. 17, section 6, using the modern polite form of direct address.*

## LESSON 19. *ANDÁRE AND FÁRE*

*Study 92 through 2 (Fare); also 48 (a), (b), (e), 54 (h), 56(b), 78*

### EXERCISE 19

1. *Translate:* andò, andréte, vánno, andáste, va', êra andáto andrêi, váda, andávano, sóno andáti, vi andái, andávo, sarê andáta, váttene, si va.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we went, you<sup>1</sup> go, they will go, you were there, he will go, he has gone there, they are going away, it goes, should have gone, go, she went away, let them go.

<sup>1</sup> Remember the directions given in the NOTE on p. 123.

3. *Translate:* fáccia, facéste, fátto, facciámo, fécerò, avéva fáccia, farésti, fo, li féce, farà, lo fácciano, si fa, è fátto, lo si fa, fáteli entrare, la fa lêggere,<sup>1</sup> le fa lêggere la lèttera, gliéla fa lêggere, me lo féce trovare.

<sup>1</sup> Translate this phrase in two ways.

4. *Translate into Italian:* I did, he will do, they are making, they would make, make, you made, we have made, let them make, they will do it, we made them, they are made, I'll have him sing, have it sung, I'll have him sing it.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Mi fáccia il favóre di chiamárlo súbito. 2. Chì va piáno va sáno<sup>1</sup> e va lontáno. 3. Facciámo una partíta de biliárdo? Ôggi no, ho trôppo da fáre, fo. 4. Se lo pèrde, gliélo ranno cercáre. 5. I suòi affári andrêbbero mēglío se non amámo tánto il dólce far niēte. 6. Quándo lúi tornò da fáre il soldáto,

<sup>1</sup> sano, 'safely.' Predicate adjectives are often adverbial in form.



era fatta sposa con un altro. 7. "Ah sì?" fece lui, "lasci fare a te." 8. Fa freddo: perchè non fanno un po' di fuoco qui? 9. Dopo avranno molte nuove conoscenze, che si chiameranno anche amicizie, ma le più vere saranno sempre le amicizie fatte in giovinèzza. 10. Se andò in America, e subito si fece ricco, ma poi perdette ogni cosa, se ne tornò povero povero<sup>1</sup> com' era andato.

<sup>1</sup> The repetition of a word serves to emphasize it.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He goes to the city every day. 2. Go and see if they are here. 3. I had him make it so because the other one was made so. 4. If they had gone there yesterday, they would have found him there. 5. We had him carry it to the village. 6. If they do as he has done, they will do more honor to him than to themselves. 7. We make more of it than they, and ours is better than theirs. 8. He went away this morning, but he'll come back soon. 9. Let him go and find it and bring it to me here. 10. It's a pretty place: we go there every Sunday.

## LESSON 20. DÁRE AND STÁRE

*Study 92, 3 and 4; also 54 (c), (d).*

### EXERCISE 20

1. *Translate:* diêde, darêtc, dîa, dâno, dêtte, darâi, dêste, diâmo, diêdero, dâi, hânno dâto, me lo dâvano, gliêlo darêbbe?, ce lo dîa, diâmogliene, ve ne darânno, se ne dà, l' avêva dâto lôro, dâmmene, gli si è dâto.

2. *Translate into Italian:* I should give, I gave, you are giving, give, we have given, I was giving, they gave them to me, he gives himself to us, he gave them some, I had given it to her, will you give me some?, we should have given them to you.

3. *Translate:* starêtc, stâvano, stêtte, stîa, slêste, stânno, stêtero, starêbbe, stâte, sta', stêmmo, stâi, stîano, stiâmo, starà, sto avorândo, stâva parlândo, stâva per dîrmelo.

4. *Translate into Italian:* he was standing, they would stand, stood, let them stand, we stood, you are standing, stand, let us stand, he stood, they are calling, I was about to thank-you.

5. *Study these sentences:* 1. Còs' hái in quèlla máno? Dámme súbito. 2. Còme sta? Beníssimo, grázie, e Lêi? 3. Stáva domandárgli perchè non se ne fósse andáto. 4. Per il Natále si dièdero déi líbri italiáni. 5. Chi dà prèsto, è còme se dèsse d'vòlte. 6. Stía attènto: non si fáccia mále. 7. Daránno il vóto a còmoglio li pága. 8. Poverétta! Sta sèmpre lì a cucíre. 9. Príma facé l'ingegnère, ma pòi si diède állo stúdio délla filosofía. 10. Tútti facévano degl' inchíni profóndi, e gli dávano dell' illústríssimo.

6. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He gave you two of them, and I gave you three. 2. They have<sup>1</sup> come back, but they are standing outside. 3. If it's his, give it to him. 4. They were explaining it to him when we came in. 5. Here you are at last: I was about to go and call you. 6. How much would you have given him? Not a cent. 7. They are giving a dinner this evening for that English writer. 8. Yesterday he was a little better, but today he's worse. 9. I thank you, sir: your words have given me the courage to (*dì*) continue. 10. Give them some<sup>2</sup> money, but don't let them come in.

<sup>1</sup> Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

<sup>2</sup> Use the partitive construction.

## LESSON 21. ARTICLES

*Study 10-16 inclusive, 45 (a)-(e) inclusive.*

### EXERCISE 21

1. *Review Exercise 3, sections 2, 3, 4.*

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Nell' unità sta la fòrza. 2. Preferís l' Ariòsto állo Spenser e Dánte állo Shakespeare. 3. Andámmo Inghiltèrra còlla mádre, e quándo nói tornámmo lêi ci restò con úsua cugína. 4. Èra òrfano, ma ùn sùo zío gli facéva da pádre. Avéva i capélli néri e fólti; néri ánche gli òcchi; néro l' ábito, no

guánti. 6. Il mēdico gli toccáva il pólso: la fèbbre montáva. 7. Si è fáttö móltó mále; avrà a restáre a cása úna settimána alméno. 8. Gli uómini piú grándi hánnó quási sēmpre le maniére sēmplici. 9. È un gran poēta; chi lo nēga párla da sciócco. 10. Ha vendúto a cása e ógni cósá, ed è partíto per gli Státi Uníti d' Amērica.

3. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Habits make us what we are. 2. We are still in France, but we hope to (*dì*) go to Italy this summer. 3. Mr. Róssi loves books, and spends almost all his time in his study; if he isn't well, it's his fault. 4. Poor Ghedíni was a friend of mine. 5. Last year Queen Margheríta travelled through France. 6. He took off his hat and made us a low bow. 7. Venice is perhaps the most beautiful of the cities of Italy. 8. If he is an Italian, let him be worthy of his fatherland. 9. He is still very young, but he talks like a man. 10. Give him your handkerchief quickly; he has cut his hand.

## LESSON 22. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION

*Read 64-67; study 92, 6-10.*

### EXERCISE 22

1. *Translate:* saprò, sēppe, sái, saprémmo, sánno, sapévo, cádono, cadrò, cáddi, cadúto, cádde, cadrēbbe, dobbiámo, dovētti, dēvi, dovémmo, dovérono, dovréte, sedéi, siédono, sedēdo, sedéte, sedētte, sedéva, véda, víde, vedrái, vísto, védano, vídero; l' avrémo sapúto, vi cádde, me lo dēve, vi sedéva?, ce lo vedémmo, lo sēppero, ci sarēbbe cadúto, gliélo dobbiámo, ci sedētti, li vedrà.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we know, they knew, you had known, know, they fell, I was falling, we shall fall, you fell, he owes, we should owe, they owe, owing, he is sitting, they will sit, you were sitting, seated, we should see, let him see, I saw, let us see; did he know it?, they had fallen there, they owe it to her, they are sitting there, did they see us?

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Stávano insiême álla finêstra a guard la néve che cadéva lênta lênta. 2. Che búio! Non ci si véde<sup>1</sup> púr. 3. Il pôvero vécchio stáva sedúto al cánto del camíno. 4. Vider lóro bambíno che giocáva<sup>2</sup> cólle pistòle déllo zío. 5. Non so se sáppia la trístè notízia. 6. Si vedéva nêlle sùe maniêre un no che di nuôvo e di stráno. 7. Mí hánno dátò tútto; non mi si d più nùlla. 8. Cói pensicri che gli girávano per la têsta non sap più in che móndo si fósse. 9. Il pôco che si sa, si sáppia bène. Non dimenticáte i cadúti per la pátria.

<sup>1</sup> *Non ci si véde*, 'One can't see.' There are several verbs that n assume the idea of possibility in the present and past descript tenses.

<sup>2</sup> *che giocáva*, 'playing.' An Italian relative clause is often equi lent to an English participle.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Let's see where they are going. 2. was standing there talking with his brother, when a brick fell on head. 3. Did you see them speak to him? Do you know th names? 4. They will not know what we are doing. 5. See: th have given me some<sup>1</sup> gloves like yours. 6. I hope that tomorrow y will all know the lesson. 7. If I see him I'll give him the ten *lire* owe him. 8. He had him sit down beside the desk. 9. Were th not standing there when you saw them? 10. He owed him everythi yet he went away leaving him alone and sick.

<sup>1</sup> Use the partitive construction.

## LESSON 23. NOUNS

*Study 22, 23, 24, 25.*

### EXERCISE 23

1. *Review Exercise 4, sections 2 and 3.*

2. *Give the plural of each of these masculine nouns:* ágo, am bácio, bôscò, bráccio, cántico, collêga, díto, dúca, equívoco, fig fuôco, ginôcchio, guáio, luêgo, míglio, mônaco, nemíco, ôbbli ôcchio, páio, patriárca, stúdio, túrco, uôvo.

3. *Give the plural of each of these feminine nouns:* bibliotêca, còs fábrica, fáccia, frángia, fúga, giacca, léga, valánga, valígia.

4. Give the masculine and feminine plural of each of these adjectives: artistico, búio, cárico, ciêco, clássico, dóppio, frésco, grígio, lárgo, lúngo, pôco, próprio, simpático, vágo, vécchio.

5. Study these sentences: 1. La ricchézza déi contadíni sta nêlle bráccia. 2. Tornárono tútti cárichi di frúttà e di confétti. 3. Si sentì tremáre le ginôcchia per la paúra. 4. E i mêdici, non gli dánno piú speránza? 5. In quéi villággi ci sôno moltíssimi ciêchi. 6. I suôi<sup>1</sup> lo crêdono un buôn ragázso; ma ha mólti vízi e pochissime virtù. 7. Che c' è di nuôvo? Gli operái hánno fáttò sciôpero. 8. Ha studiáto il tedésco dúe ánni, ed óra lo párla assái bêne. 9. Il súo aspétto avéva quálche còsa di misteríoso, quási di divíno. 10. Le lóro fácce e maniêre hánno un non so che di sêmplice e di umáno che fa vedére che la lóro víta si fónða sul véro e non sul fálsò.

<sup>1</sup> *I suôi*, 'His family.' The masculine plural possessives are often used in this way.

6. Translate into Italian: 1. Yesterday morning they walked more than ten miles. 2. They hope that their old friends will arrive this evening. 3. We saw them with our own eyes. 4. The lakes are longer than they<sup>1</sup> are<sup>1</sup> broad. 5. He has finished his studies on the libraries of ancient times. 6. Give me two pairs of stockings. 7. They are very agreeable young men. 8. Her eyes were black as night, and her cheeks were white as snow. 9. He has lost two fingers of his right hand. 10. The monarchs of Milan were called dukes; those of Venice, dogs; those of Rome, popes; and those of Naples, kings.

<sup>1</sup> Omit these words in translating.

## LESSON 24. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION (continued)

Study 92, 11-17.

### EXERCISE 24

1. Translate: giácciono, giáccue, giacêndo, piacerêi, piáce, piácquero, táccia, táci, tácqui, suôle, sólito, solévano, dorrà, dôlse, rimásero, rimánga, rimarréste, tiêne, terréte, ténne, tenúti, têngano,



teniámo; gli piáce,<sup>1</sup> gli piáccio, le piácciono, vi piacéva?, piácció loro, gli duóle,<sup>1</sup> vi rimángano, c' è rimásta, vi saráno rimásti, tenéva, teniámolo, l' avéva tenúto.

<sup>1</sup> The personal object of *piacére* or *dolére* is indirect.

2. *Translate into Italian:* he was lying, it lay, they please, you will please, they were silent, we shall be silent, they were wont, grieves, remain, they remain, thou holdest, they would hold; pleases me, I like it,<sup>1</sup> they please me, I like them, it pleased him, he liked it, she liked it, we liked it, they liked it, they have remained there, they are held, we should have held them.

<sup>1</sup> When 'like' has a noun or a pronoun as object, the sentence should be recast for translation into Italian by substituting 'please' for 'like' and making the original object the subject and the original subject the object: 'I like it' = 'it pleases me.'

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Gli piacerébbe móltó se Lèi gliélo dèss. 2. Arrivárono lunedì, e ci rimarráno alméno fíno a doménica. Non crédo che quel pósto gli piáccia:<sup>1</sup> non c' è niénte da fáre. 4. Io m' entrò úna spína nel piéde, e ancóra mi duóle. 5. Tèngo per fèrmi che un tále dóno non gli piacerà. 6. Facéva un gran fréddo; ma tenéva vívo il fuòco, e si stáva al caminétto. 7. È diffícile piaceré e lúí non cérca mái di piacére a nessúno. 8. Ha tánte buòne qualitè peccáto che non sáppia tenér la língua. 9. Mi fáccia il piacére fármelo vedére. 10. La nòtte tacéva: non un suòno, non úna vóce sólo si sentíva, da lontáno, il mormorío del fíume.

<sup>1</sup> *piáccia*, 'will please.' The present subjunctive often has a future-tense-value.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. It fell and lay three days on the ground. 2. He was sitting in the room where his brother lay sick. 3. Have you seen my new coat? how do you like it? 4. If they keep still, we shall not know where they have been. 5. I have been studying too much; my eyes are paining me. 6. If you don't like this one, I will give you another. 7. It would grieve him very much if they should go away now. 8. The village lies at the foot of the mountain, near the river. 9. Don't go now: stay to dinner, and then let's go to the theatre. 10. He kept us in doubt up to the last moment.

<sup>1</sup> 'should go': use the past subjunctive.

## LESSON 25. AUGMENTATIVES, DIMINUTIVES, AND NUMERALS

*Study 35-40 inclusive.*

### EXERCISE 25

1. *Pronounce and translate:* cinquantatrè, settantasèi, novantadúe, cèntodiciassètte, dugèntoquarantòtto, quattrocèntottantúno, seicèntotrentanòve, novecèntosessantasètte, milletrecèntoventidúe, millenovecèntoquíndici, tremilaquarantacínque.

2. *Read in Italian:* 31, 77, 243, 854, 1265, 1321, 1492, 1621, 1775, 1915; Sisto IV, Innocènzo VIII, Alessándro VI, Pío III, Giúlio II, Leóné X, Adriáno VI, Clemènte VII, Pío IX, Leóné XIII, Pío X, Benedétto XV.

3. *Translate:* sóno le tre, sóno le cínque e dièci, sóno le dièci e un quáрто, sóno le sèi e mèzzo, sóno le nòve méno vénti, sóno le ótto méno un quáрто, sóno le dúe méno dódici.

4. *Translate into Italian:* it's four o'clock, it's 6:12, it's half past eight, it's 25 minutes of nine, it's six minutes of five; April 1, April 2, April 3, April 22.

5. *Translate in terms of American money:*<sup>1</sup> dièci centèsimi, cinquánta centèsimi, úna líra e vénti centèsimi, trentún sóldo, dúe líre e quaránta, cínque líre e mèzzo, sètte líre e cinquánta, vénti líre, sessantaquíe líre e quarantacínque centèsimi, mille líre.

<sup>1</sup> 100 centèsimi = 1 líra = 20 cents; 5 centèsimi = 1 sóldo.

6. *Translate in terms of Italian money:* \$.05, \$.18, \$.25, \$.42, \$1.00, \$1.50, \$6.38, \$100.00.

7. *Study these sentences:* 1. La lèttera fu datáta "Róma, venerdì 15 febráio 1823." 2. Lo fornì di úna ventína di líre, tróppe per chi le dáva, tróppo póche per chi le ricevéva. 3. Il cósto totále sarèbbe di líre cinquantasèi e centèsimi settantacínque. 4. Lúi allóra avévá ventiquáttro ánni, e lèi soltánto dicióttó. 5. Érano in tútto quíndici bigliétti da dièci líre. 6. Nel quarantòtto combattè a Miláno cóntro gli Austríaci. 7. Ha pubblicáto or óra un volúme súlla pittúra del

Trecênto. 8. Vi andò néi prími giòrni del 1612, e vi rimàse fíno mēzzo il 1614. 9. A che óra pártè il tréno? Álle quíndici e mēz, cioè álle tre e mēzzo dópo mēzzogiórno. 10. La raccòlta più imp tãnte dèlle poesíe italiãne più antíche è il còdice vaticãno 3793.

8. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They woke me at five o'clock. It dark and cold, and it was snowing hard. 2. The sonnet consists of 14 lines, and each line of 11 syllables. 3. The 15th century and the 16th are the two centuries of the Renaissance in Italy. 4. He made him repeat it five times. 5. The work of Manzoni falls in the first half of the 19th century. 6. I gave him 30 lire and he bought two pairs of shoes. 7. Seven months have 31 days, four 30, and one 28 or 29. 8. Would you do me the favor (*di*) lend me ten *lire* or so until Monday? 9. From the tower one saw thousands<sup>1</sup> and thousands of persons crowded in the streets and the squares. 10. Victor Emmanuel II was the first king of the Third Italy.

<sup>1</sup> Use *migliáio*.

## LESSON 26. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION (continued)

*Study 92, 18-22; also 79 (b) 1.*

### EXERCISE 26

1. *Translate:* varrò, válse, válgono, valémmo, valévano, válsere, vògliono, vuòi, vorrà, volévo, vuòle, vorrèi, paiámo, párvì, párrémmo, párvero, parréte, potéi, pòssono, potèndo, potéte, può, persuáda, persuáse, persuadévano, persuadiámo, persuádi, persuádi; lo varránno, l' hánno volúto, ci èra párso, non avrés potúto, persuadételi, non lo valéva, vorránno fárlò?, gli párv non si può, sóno státi persuási.

2. *Translate into Italian:* it would be worth, we are worth, was worth, you were worth, they wished, I was wishing, we shall wish, you wished, it seems, we should seem, they seem, seemingly he can, they will be able, you were able, they can, we should persuade, let him persuade, I persuaded, let us persuade; will

be worth it?, did they wish it?, it seemed to us, we have not been able, haven't they persuaded him?

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Rimánga se può, ma váda se ha da studiáre. 2. Quánto créde che válgano quégli anèlli? 3. È difficile, o so, ma còsa vuòle? fáccia tútto quéllo che potrà. 4. Avéva fáttö còme paréva mèglio a lúi. 5. La chièsa sta più in álto: ci vuòle un' óra per arrivárci. Óh allóra non vále la péna. 6. Chi non può fáre còme vuòle, fáccia còme può. 7. Non si può contentárló: più ne ha e più ne vuòle. 8. Dúe non basteránnó: ce ne vògliono alméno quáttro. 9. Se potésse fármí quéstó piacére Le saréi mílle vólte obbligáto. 10. Volére è potére.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. We shall not be able to persuade him. 2. They seem large, but they cannot be good. 3. If you wish it, they will stay with you. 4. I should not have thought that they were worth<sup>1</sup> so much. 5. They owe me 20 *lire*, and they are not willing to pay me. 6. I wanted to give it to you, but I couldn't. 7. My head aches so much that I can't study. 8. He's going away tomorrow, although he wants<sup>1</sup> to stay here. 9. I should like to speak to you about it; could you stay ten minutes or so? 10. It takes a brave man to (a) do a thing like that.

<sup>1</sup> Use the subjunctive.

## LESSON 27. AUXILIARY VERBS

*Study 54, 57.*

### EXERCISE 27

1. *Translate:* dèvo parláre, dovévo parláre, dovéi parláre, dovrò parláre, dovrèi parláre, ho dovúto parláre, avévo dovúto parláre, avrò dovúto parláre, avréi dovúto parláre; pòsso parláre, potévo parláre, potéi parláre, potrò parláre, potrèi parláre, ho potúto parláre, avévo potúto parláre, avrò potúto parláre, avréi potúto parláre; vòglio parláre, volévo parláre, vóllo parláre, vorrò parláre, vorréi parláre, ho volúto parláre, avévo volúto parláre, avrò volúto parláre, avréi volúto parláre; gliélo avévano dovúto dáre, non avrémmo potúto persuadérlo, avréste volúto vedérli?, non éra

potúto entráre, avrêbbe dovúto finíro, avevámo volúto comprá stiámo per andárcene, rimáse tradíto, va studiáto così, lo fé portáre, bisognerêbbe prestárglieli, hámmo da cercáro, non sa spiegarlo, non potémmo a méno di non tacére.

2. *Translate into Italian:* they are to speak, we must speak, you were to speak, he had to speak, we shall have to speak, you ought to speak, he would have to speak, they have been obliged to speak, he must have spoken, she had had to speak, we should have had to speak, he ought to have spoken, they were not able to speak, he may have spoken, they could have spoken, I should not have been able to speak, I might have spoken, will they be willing to speak?, he had been willing to speak.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Avêndo tánto da fáre in città, avrê dovúto partíre col trêno dèlle sêtte e mézzo. 2. Vòlle fáre úna vísita cása súa per vedére i suòi, che non avéva vísti da tánto têmpo. 3. A quel têmpo non si potéva vedére tútto ciò che s' è vedúto d'òggi. 4. Lásciano la scuòla con l' òdio per le còse di cúi si sóno dovúti occupáre e per gli autóri di cúi hámmo dovúto studiáre le òpere. 5. Non capísco cóme úna còsa símile ábbia potúto accadére. 6. Dópo a fáto fáto tútti gli sfórzi possíbili, si è dovúto capitoláre. 7. Non sarêbbe potúto arriváre a Firênze neánche la séra. 8. Io chiamerò prêsto perchê dovrái andáre álla stazióne a pigliáre il trêno. 9. Avéva speráto che nêlla cása patérna avrêbbe potúto godére almen un pó' d' affêtto. 10. Mólto sa chi pòco sa, se tacér sa.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. If I saw him, I should have to speak to him. 2. You ought to know when you will be able to bring it to us. 3. He would have had to keep still: he didn't know their names. 4. You must work if you want to please him. 5. They may find it but I'm afraid that they have<sup>1</sup> left it in the city. 6. It grieves me but I shall have to do it. 7. We ought to have kept still, but we couldn't help laughing. 8. He would like to know why they had to go away. 9. In what might I have the honor of serving you? He always wanted to do what seemed best to him.

<sup>1</sup> Use the subjunctive.



## LESSON 28. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION

*Study 92 (e), (f), (g) (on p. 85), 24-73 [omitting verbs marked Rare, and forms in parentheses].*

### EXERCISE 28

1. *Inflect the present tenses of* affliggere, conóscere, créscere, *and* éggere.

2. *Translate:* accendêlo, accése, afflító, allúdono, ardéva, arderà, risolvétte, chiúde, chiuderémo, conosciúto, conósca, conóbbero, corriámo, corrévano, córse, crésce, crescerà, cuòce, decída, decísi, difése, dirésse, dirigerò, discússero, distínti, divísero, esistíto, esístono, esprimàno, esprése, fítto, fínga, fingiámo, frígge, fúso, invásero, léggano, lèssero, mettiámo, mísi.

3. *Translate into Italian:* I light, he alluded, I will shut, he knew, run, grown, cooking, they decided, let us divide, it exists, he will express, fried, they will invade, let him read, they put.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Gli esprése il súo rincresciménto per quel che si éra fátto. 2. Gli si leggéva la giòia nel víso. 3. Ci mise davánti<sup>1</sup> un mucchio di cárte. 4. Mi lásci parlàre; non chiúda il cuóre álla pietà. 5. Lo conóbbi a Firénze l' áнно scórso. 6. Il fòndo del románzo è stòrico, ma vi è mescoláto il fínto col véro. 7. Più li conósce e più gli crésce l' amicízia per lóro. 8. Le opinióni si divísero: alcúni appláudírono la súa azióne, áltro la biasimárono. 9. Nel Cinquecêto Francési e Spagnuòli córsero tútta l' Itália. 10. Distinguiámo nel súo caráttere quel che vi è di sincêro<sup>2</sup> e quel che vi è di fálsò.

<sup>1</sup> *Ci mise davánti*, 'He put before us.' When the logical object of an Italian preposition is an unemphatic personal pronoun, the use of a disjunctive pronoun is often avoided by putting a conjunctive pronoun before the verb and treating the preposition as an adverb.

<sup>2</sup> *quel che vi è di sincêro*, 'its elements of sincerity.'

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. It's the third time she has read that book. 2. Do you know my friend Mr. Ghedíni? 3. He went to the door, shut it, and put the key in his pocket. 4. I lighted the other

light and ran into the room. 5. Do you want fried eggs? 6. What is she cooking now? 7. Do me the favor to (*dì*) shut the door. Have those windows been shut? 8. Where did you put my hat? I have to go now, and I can't find it. 9. To whom was he alluding when he spoke of his enemies? 10. The schools will be closed from June to September.

## LESSON 29. MOODS AND TENSES

*Study 69-76 inclusive.*

### EXERCISE 29

1. *Study these sentences:* 1. Il lasciár le múra délla città e il riveder la cása patérna nel píccolo villággio fúrono sensazioni piène di gioia. 2. Vedéndolo veníre con quéi líbri in máno, n' éra móltó liêta, speráva che gliéli avrèbbe regaláti. 3. Partírono pòco dópo il levár del sùl e tornárono sul far délla séra. 4. Non sapéva nè cóme fáre nè d'andáre. 5. A continuáre cosí si córré il perícólo di pèrdere tútto che si è guadagnáto. 6. Credè di avér trováto quel che cercáva tanto tèmpo. 7. Quándo avrái gli ánni che ho ío, non sarái micc prònto a giudicáre gli áltri. 8. Finíta la lezióne, tornárono a càsa e trovárono il cuginó che li aspettáva. 9. Non ci avrèbbe nùlla a dár a un pòvero ciêco? 10. Tórno piàn piáno álla cása; píccolo, nissúno rispónde; éntro; e ci tróvo — còsa crêde? 11. Inútil illúdersi; non c' è piú speránza. 12. L' ésser simpátici non básta, bisógna éssere útili a quálche còsa. 13. Rimarrái ísno álle cínque, n' è véro? Non mi díre di no. 14. Quándo arrivái a cása, mío papà non c' éra. Mía mádre si spaventò, perchè vedéndomi cosí pallído, mi credétte maláto. 15. Auguráta la buóna nótte al padrón, n' andò in frétta. 16. Lúi gli vendè l' ánima, e il diávolo gli promise che per un cêrto tèmpo gli avrèbbe ubbidíto cóme a súo signóre. Tornátì che fúrono, domandárono súbito da mangiáre. 17. In quél vagóne è proibíto fumáre. 18. Appéna mi víde, la súa espressióne, irrequiêta che éra,<sup>2</sup> si féce minacciósa. 20. La stráda che mènava a Sorrento è un succèdersi contínuo di púnti di vísta stupèndi.

<sup>1</sup> *Non ci avrèbbe nulla*, 'Haven't you anything?' The use of past future gives the sentence an apologetic tone.

<sup>2</sup> *da irrequiêta che éra*, 'instead of anxious.'

2. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Do you prefer traveling to studying? 2. I'll have it given back at once. 3. Their manners may be crude, but they are sincere. 4. Gratitude is to be praised. 5. You know, doubtless,<sup>1</sup> that my brother has returned. 6. When you arrive in (a) Florence, you will find at the hotel a letter from (di) my agent. 7. Have you not heard him spoken of? 8. I have been here for two months, working<sup>2</sup> in the libraries. 9. Where are they? They are here outside, waiting for<sup>3</sup> you. 10. He ought to have spoken to you about it himself, instead of writing.

<sup>1</sup> Express this idea in the verb.

<sup>2</sup> Translate by *a* with the infinitive.

<sup>3</sup> Use a relative clause instead of a participle.

### LESSON 30. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

*Study 92, 75-124 [omitting verbs marked Rare or Poetical, and forms in parentheses].*

#### EXERCISE 30

1. *Inflect the present tenses of muovere and sorgere.*

2. *Translate:* mórdo, mórdo, mósc, moverà, nàsc, nàcquero, nascosto, nascondévo, neglétto, offendéndo, offési, pèrso, perlerèbbe, piovéva, pioverà, prènda, prèso, protèggono, protèsse, vedènta, ràso, rendévano, rídi, rísero, rispónda, rispósi, rótti, rúppero, scendémmo, scorgiámo, scríva, scríssi, scóss, sórg, spargéva, spòrgono, succèsse, téso, tòrce, tòrse, ucciderà, vínco, vínsero, vòlso, volgerèbbe.

3. *Translate into Italian:* they were moving, he was born, hide, we are losing, it is raining, let them take, he laughed, they answered, broken, write, he shook, they rise, she spent, it happens, it would kill, I shall conquer, let him live, they turned.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Se te li prèsto, quándo me li renderái? 2. La scodèlla gli càdde per tèrra e si rúppe in tre pèzzi. 3. Sóli quèlli che gli vívono da prèss, sánno che égli è ánche piú búono che

gránde. 4. Scríva un pó' mēglíó; altríménti non potránno lēgg  
niēnte. 5. Succēsse úna páusa, róttá finalménte da un grído  
terróre. 6. Non si lásce víncere dall' íra. 7. Il còdice fu scríto  
páre, vērso la fíne del Trecēto. 8. È succēso quéllo che pur tróp  
non potéva non succédere. 9. L' Itália nácque cóme nâscono t  
le nazióni nuóve, dall' enērgía déi méno che pórtá al destíno l' inē  
déi piú. 10. Bēn perdúto è conosciúto.

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He put it on the table, but some  
has moved it. 2. Let's stand under that tree while it rains. 3.  
he had moved it, it would have fallen. 4. There the mountains  
from the waters of the lake. 5. Goldóni and Alfieri lived in  
18th century. 6. They are all running: what has<sup>1</sup> happened?  
He shook his head, smiling, and turned<sup>2</sup> toward the door. 8. W  
I spoke to him about it, he laughed, and did not answer me. 9.  
what year was Dante born? 10. They don't think he will live  
he remains here.

<sup>1</sup> Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

<sup>2</sup> Put the proper reflexive pronoun before the verb.

<sup>3</sup> Use the subjunctive.

## LESSON 31. CONJUNCTIONS

### *Study 78.*

### EXERCISE 31

1. *Give the meanings of these conjunctions:* a méno che non, accioc  
affinchè, ánze, avánti che, benchè, chè, dacchè, dátto che, dón  
dovúnque, finchè, finchè non, méntre, neánche, ossía, perchè (*w*  
*indicative*), perchè (*with subjunctive*), per quánto, poichè, práma c  
purchè, púre, qualúnque, quási, sebbène, se non che, siccóme.

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Seguitò a filáre finchè il figlio del  
non se ne fu andáto. 2. L' avrèbbe potúto fáre, purchè l' avé  
volúto. 3. Mólto sòno e i difètti e i perícóli di úna tále decisió  
4. I giòrni passávano sēza che il pádre gliēne parlásse. 5. N  
l' avrèbbe mái sapúto, se non che le si spedì da Miláno un giorn  
còlla notízia. 6. Lo conoscévo néi giòrni che éra qui a visitá

la nōnna. 7. Non ci aiúta púnto, ánze c' impedísce. 8. Le sùe espressioni, per quánto fóssero fórti, non érano esageráte. 9. Mi dispiácque di non avér-la vedúta prima che partísse. 10. Non voléva nemméno vedérlo, non che parlárgli.

3. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They were sitting in the parlor while I was writing the letters. 2. Who is going there today? Either he or I. 3. They received them as if they were old friends. 4. He remained at the window until he heard them knock. 5. We will pardon him provided he will promise to (*dì*) give it back to us at once. 6. I found it without difficulty, although he had hidden it with the greatest care. 7. When you see him, do me the favor to (*dì*) give him these tickets. 8. I should like to speak to him before he goes. 9. Since they are worth what they cost, why don't you buy them? 10. I sent you<sup>1</sup> here in order that you should study, not in order that you should waste my money.

<sup>1</sup> Use the second person singular in translating this sentence.

## LESSON 32. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

*Study 92, 127-133.*

### EXERCISE 32

1. *Translate:* bévano, bévve, berà, avrèbbe bevúto, beviámo, bée, chièsto, chièsi, chiedéte, chiederánno, chièda, chiedévano, condurrèi, condótto, condússero, condúca, condúci, sóno condótti, nocéva, nuòce, nòcque, póngà, pósto, pósi, poniámo, porrà, póne, traévano, trássero, trággono, trarrémo, avévano trátto, trágga.

2. *Translate into Italian:* they would drink, he was drinking, I drank, let him drink, let us ask, he will have asked, they asked, we were asking, I conducted, let them conduct, he has conducted, I was conducting, it will harm, they harmed, we put, put, they are putting, they will put, he dragged, we should drag, I have dragged.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Quándo avrà sèi ánni lo porrémo a scuòla. 2. Se bevésse un pó' di quel víno, gli farèbbe bène. 3. Il fumàre tróppo gli ha nociúto graveménte. 4. Non le sa negàre quel



che gli chiêde.<sup>1</sup> 5. Soffrì lúngi anni di úna malattía di cuóre e finalménte lo trásse álla môrte. 6. Ho sête: dâmmi da bère. Vorrêi chiêderle úna vacánza di pôchi giòrni, finchè mi rimétta pô' in salúte. 8. Finì col dârsi per vînto, e col concêdere tútto quâ gli êra richiêsto. 9. Quêsto mi ha indóttto a riconóscere in l' autóre dèlle mie disgrázie. 10. Tútte le strâde condúcono a Róm.

<sup>1</sup> The personal object of *chiêdere* is indirect.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Drink a little water. 2. They putting it in the other corner of the room. 3. Clouds of smoke were rising, and they were dragging everything out of the house. 4. I found it there because I found it there: don't move it. 5. Go and ask him why he didn't read what I wrote. 6. If you stay to dinner, we will take<sup>1</sup> you to the theatre this evening. 7. The house was placed so that one could see between the hills as far as the river. 8. If you had asked me for<sup>2</sup> it, I should have given it to you. 9. Then he drew his sword and took<sup>3</sup> his place at the head of his company. He put his hands on my shoulders and asked me if I had been a good boy.

<sup>1</sup> Use *menâre*.    <sup>2</sup> *Chiêdere* means 'to ask for.'    <sup>3</sup> Use *prêndere*.

## LESSON 33. THE SUBJUNCTIVE

*Study 77 through (f).*

### EXERCISE 33

1. *Study these sentences:* 1. Sênta: potrêbbe prestârmî per quâlo giòrno úna ventína di lîre? 2. Bisognáva che ne trovássero un álter perfêttaménte sîmile a quéllo che si êra perdúto. 3. Ci fáccia sapêre quâle difficoltà ci sía. 4. È il poêta piú clâssico e nondiméno il piú modêrno che ábbia l' Itália. 5. Quâto mále ci ha fáttto! Nón l' avéssimo mái vístto! 6. Se avésse úno che si prendésse cûra di noi, ánche lúi potrêbbe far méglîo. 7. Lêgga, scríva, non sía mái ozioso, non chiêda mái a nessúno, non spêri che nel súo lavóro. 8. Non vîni piú alcúno che crêda álle lóro stórie. 9. Tí sía sêmpre nêlla mênza, che il compiacêrsi déi máli dégli áltri è crudeltà. 10. Se vuôle andâre.

e ne váda; per me, ci avrèi piacére. 11. Èra un' idèa di cúì parláva  
 12. Fóssi tu  
 13. ui con me! Pur trôppo bisógna óra che tu rimánga in città. 13.  
 14. ádi di non parlármi piú così; e básti l' avvíso per quèsta vólta  
 15. Si mostrò prònto a tútto ciò che potésse piacére ai superióri.  
 16. Domandò álla sêrva se si potésse parláre al padróne. 16. Diví-  
 17. ero la città in sêi párti, ed elêssero dódici cittadíni che la governássero.  
 18. Nessúno se ne meravígli: êra da aspettársi. 18. Benchè non vi  
 19. ía niènte che ábbia l' ária di êssere esageráto, tútto il líbro è úna  
 20. terríbile accúsa. 19. Se ci va spésso, è perchè ci si mángia bène.  
 20. Parrêbbe impossíbile a chi non lo conoscésse per quell' uòmo che è.

2. *Translate into Italian:* 1. If he were here, perhaps he would be  
 able to give us a little light. 2. He asked me if I were really a count.  
 3. This is the first and only pleasure I have had since I have been  
 here. 4. It would be enough to (*per*) convince one who had not  
 worn to remain in the dark. 5. They wanted to give her a name  
 that should recall her aunt's affection. 6. Russia is the only  
 country in (*di*) Europe that he hasn't visited. 7. They are things  
 that happen often, although they seem impossible. 8. Did they  
 ask you if you had read his last novel? 9. Wherever I go, that  
 scene is ever before my eyes. 10. They had placed a guard at the  
 only door by which he could have escaped.

### LESSON 34. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION (continued)

*Study 92, 134-148.*

#### EXERCISE 34

1. *Translate:* còglie, còlse, coglierémo, scélga, scélto, sceglíevi,  
 sciogliémmo, sciogliéndo, avrêbbe sciólto, tòlgono, torrà, torrèi,  
 giungéte, giúnsero, sóno giúnti, piángi, piánse, piangerò, pínge,  
 píngano, pingeránno, spêgne, spêNSE, spegnéva, spínga, avéva,  
 pínto, spínsero, strétto, stríngono, stringémmo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* they gather, we gathered, I was  
 choosing, let them choose, we have taken, I shall take, you are

weeping, I wept, they extinguish, we shall extinguish, you w  
pushing, I had pushed, we are bound, bind.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Il sóle che caláva tingéva di róssor  
ácque del lágo. 2. La Cappèlla Sistína fu dipínta da Micheláng  
tra il 1508 e il 1512. 3. Gli afferrò la dèstra e gliéla strínse con fó  
ma al ritiráre la máno la víde tñta di sángue. 4. Tútti quél  
éra strétto d' amicizia se n' andárono, lasciándolo sólo sólo. 5. N  
si sapéva se ríderne o piángerne; infátti alcúni piánsero, sorridèr  
però fra le lágrime. 6. Se si potéssero parláre úna vólta, le diffic  
sarèbbero súbito sciólte. 7. Érano giúnti a un tal púnto che bi  
gnáva o víncere o pèrder ógni còsa. 8. Stáva inginocchióni cò  
máni giúnte in átto di preghiéra. 9. Gli tólse di máno il den  
sénza nemméno ringraziárlo. 10. L' imperatóre, poèta égli stés  
protésse i poèti e li accòlse e onorò nélla súa córte.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Among all the employees they ch  
him as the most industrious. 2. Then they looked at each oth  
and began to weep. 3. Go and gather some<sup>1</sup> flowers for the vases  
the parlor. 4. When we arrived, the sacristan was putting out t  
lights. 5. Take<sup>2</sup> those papers from the table and put them on t  
desk. 6. In ancient times cities were surrounded by walls and ditch  
7. He pushed me into (a) this business, and now he ought to help n  
8. They were crying like children; she was going from one to the oth  
trying to (di) comfort them. 9. We found ourselves compelled to  
ask him for it. 10. He might have surrendered: he chose to (di) die

<sup>1</sup> Use the partitive construction.

<sup>2</sup> Use *togliere*.

## LESSON 35. PREPOSITIONS

### *Study 79.*

### EXERCISE 35

1. *Give the meaning of these prepositions:* accánto a, al di là d  
attórno a, círca, cóntro, déntro di, diètro, dirimpétto a, dópo, eccètt  
fin da, fíno a, fuòri di, innánzi, intórno a, lúngo, óltre, quánto  
rispétto a, secóndo, síno a, sótto, su, tra, tránne.

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Se vuôl rimanére con nôi, ha da fáre quel che vòglio io. 2. Óra le ha compráto úna mácchina da cucíre. 3. Ce lo giurò per quánto avéva di più cáro. 4. Da allóra in pòi visse da buôn cristiáno. 5. Lo so per cêrto che ôggi non gli hánno dáto da mangiáre. 6. Al dí là del fiúme si vedévano dèlle vécchie fórrì medioeváli. 7. Ci si ammalávano a centináia per giòrno. 8. C' éra úna vólta un bël fanciúllò dái capélli bióndi e dágli ôcchi azzúrri, che avéva fra i dièci e i dódici ánni. 9. Lúi, poverétto, stáva zítto a guardármì, ed ío gli parlái con un tóno da fárgli corággio. 10. Álla pórta délla chiêsa c' éra úna vécchia che accattáva da chi entráva; il ragázso andò da lêi, e le diêde metà del súdo páne.

3. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They want to have (*fáre*) lunch before the others. 2. You can't persuade him to vote against the government. 3. We'll be at your house in an hour and a half. 4. They will arrive on (*con*) the 5.20 train. 5. He went to France in 1872, and remained there for three or four years. 6. Go tell<sup>1</sup> them they'll have to do without me. 7. His arrival was greeted by all with an exclamation of surprise. 8. I begged my father to take<sup>2</sup> me to the city to see my cousins. 9. They have been living in Venice for six months. 10. You ought to do something for him instead of letting him suffer so.

<sup>1</sup> Use *dire*, the personal object of which is indirect.

<sup>2</sup> Use *mendare*.

## LESSON 36. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION

*Study 92, 149-163.*

### EXERCISE 36

1. *Translate:* áprono, aprì, sóno apêrti, còpra, copêrse, copríte, offrímmo, offirirà, offêrsi, soffríi, hánno soffêrto, soffirêi, costruívano, digerísce, esauríto, è státo sepólto, cucívo, émpiono, émpi, émpiere, muòia, morránnò, è mórto, ségui, seguì, seguirêi, spárve, sparíscono, sparirà.

2. *Translate into Italian:* we opened, they would open, covered, let us offer, he has offered, he is suffering, you will suffer, she was sewing, he died, I shall die, following, let us follow, would disappear, they disappeared.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Se la túa pátria avrà bisógno d'òffrile te stéssu. 2. Le finêstre déllu stúdio si áprono all' ést. Pòssa tu godére quant' ío ho soffêrto e sòffro. 4. Tútti i fígli êrano môrti, l' úno dópo l' áltro, ed êra rimásta sóla sóla al món. 5. Gli appárve in sógno un fantásma che lo minacciáva di môrte. 6. Lúi proseguíva il lavóro sênza badáre a ciò che facévano gli álti. 7. Di quésto si tratterà nel capítolo seguênte. 8. Ha la spòsa rícorso ma morrêbbe piuttòsto che chiêderle un sòldo. 9. Compiúti stúdi, fécc un lúngo viággio per l' Euròpa. 10. Muôr giòvane co' l' ânima che al ciêlo è cáro.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. If the window isn't open, do me the favor to open it. 2. He died last night at half past eleven. 3. There are old customs that now are disappearing. 4. Let's offer them to her, and if she doesn't want them we'll keep them for ourselves. 5. The king is dead: long<sup>1</sup> live the king! 6. She covered her face with her hands and wept. 7. You have written a song that will not die. 8. I opened the window and called them, but they didn't hear me. 9. If I suffered as they have suffered, I should die. 10. They are building a theatre on the site of those old shops.

<sup>1</sup> Omit this word in translating.

## LESSON 37. THE SUBJUNCTIVE (continued)

*Study 77 (g), (h), (i).*

### EXERCISE 37

1. *Study these sentences:*<sup>1</sup> 1. Páre che se ne síano scordáti affátti. 2. Bádi che non gli fácciano mále! 3. Se le dispiáce che lo fáccian a gli álti, non lo fáccia lêi stéssu. 4. Mí rincrésce che Léi ábbia dovúto partíre sênza vedérli. 5. Non permíse però che finísse cosí. 6. Cò

<sup>1</sup> In several of these sentences the *che* clause should be replaced, in translation, by an infinitive construction.



pensi tu che ci sia da fare? 7. Non sapéva che s' éra proibíto che  
 forestiêri visitássero la fortézza? 8. Non potrai veníre dománi?  
 Avrêi bisógno che tu mi aiutássi. 9. Il pónte par che ségni il púnto  
 in cúi il fúme éntra nel lágo. 10. Non si può non sospettáre che  
 'abbiano sapúto. 11. Paréva ci fóssero dégli spíriti invisíbili. 12.  
 Tême che gli si pòssa tógliere quel che ha guadagnáto. 13. Vòglia  
 il ciêlo che non vênga un giòrno in cúi si pènta di non avérmi ascoltáto.  
 14. Láscono ch' ío gli párli ancóra úna vólta prima che se ne váda!  
 15. Chi vuòi che le cómpri, délle scárpe cosí? 16. Ho létto quélle  
 págine col più vívo interêsse, e vorrêi che le potéssero lègger tútti.  
 17. Se vuòle che gli si pòrti rispètto, dève imparáre a rispèttáre gli  
 altri. 18. L' ho sentito negáre che la víta per sè stéssa sia desiderábile.  
 19. Pagáre e pòi pagáre, perchè i nôstri soldáti vádano a moríre  
 nell' África, non si può pretèndere che piáccia al pòpolo italiáno.  
 20. Non possiámo permétttere che cèrti púnti del Mediterráneo siano  
 brési ed occupáti da colóro che un giòrno potrèbbero êsserci nemíci.

2. *Translate into Italian:* 1. I am surprised that you do not under-  
 stand it. 2. I know they wanted me to stay<sup>1</sup> until tomorrow. 3. It  
 seemed to us that they were afraid that someone would recognize  
 them. 4. He begged them to give<sup>1</sup> him a little bread. 5. It may be  
 believed that he has earned in this way more than 2000 *lire*. 6. He  
 was ashamed that they should think that he had not been content.  
 7. Yesterday I heard that he was a little better. 8. Doesn't it seem  
 to you that he is asking too much? 9. He ordered them all to be<sup>1</sup>  
 silent. 10. I hope he'll give you all you want.

<sup>1</sup> Use a *che* clause, turning the preceding personal pronoun into a  
 subject.

## LESSON 38. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION (continued)

*Study 92, 164-168.*

### EXERCISE 38

1. *Translate:* díssero, dicéva, è státo détto, di', dícano, dirésti,  
 salí, sálga, salíte, salívano, sálgo, salirà, vièni, verrà, vénne, sóno  
 venúti, vênga, verrêi, udírono, ôde, udiránno, êsca, uscíamo.

2. *Translate into Italian:* you say, he said, say, they are ascending, I ascended, let us ascend, they came, I shall come, she has come, they hear, hearing, we had heard, he is going out, they went out, I should go out.

3. *Study these sentences:* 1. Quando uscì di camera, mia madre già alzata, mi aspettava per dirmi addio. 2. Che cosa vuol dire questa parola? 3. Ci dice che sono venuti tutti, e che rimarranno fino alle dieci. 4. I prezzi delle carni sono già saliti assai. 5. Mio padre benedice i figli e i figli dei figli suoi. 6. Rifiutò nondimeno l'aiuto che gli veniva offerto. 7. Erano sempre severi con lui, senza mai dirne il perché. 8. Poi le venne in mente che aveva promesso restituírglieli il giorno dopo. 9. I fatti che siamo venuti a narrare bastano a dimostrare la falsità dell'accusa. 10. Dimmi con pratici e ti dirò chi sei.

4. *Translate into Italian:* 1. They come and they disappear. Where do they all go? Tell me, do they all die? 2. I'm afraid they won't come if it rains. 3. If it's he, call him, and tell him I should like to speak to him. 4. He is much better now; he goes out almost every day. 5. Let them tell him to come at once. 6. They told me that he had arrived Monday. 7. They came; I heard them open the door; they went up; and then they disappeared. I went out but they had gone away. 8. Did they tell you when they would come? 9. If he had told you that, what would you have done? 10. I came, I saw, I conquered.

## LESSON 39. ADVERBS AND INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

*Study 80-91 inclusive.*

### EXERCISE 39

1. *Give the meanings of these indefinite pronouns and adjectives:* alcuno, altri, altrui, ambedue, certo, chi, chicchessia, ciascheduno, ciascuno, méno, nessuno, nulla, ognuno, parecchi, per quanto, qualunque, qualcosa, qualcuno, qualunque, sì, un tale.

2. *Study these sentences:* 1. Sentì qualchedúno che piangéva lì dentro. 2. Se fóssi Léi, gli scriverèi un' áltra vólta, benchè non Le abbia mái rispósto. 3. Sentíva un gran desidèrio di fáre qualcòsa di gráno e di terríbile. 4. L' úno e l' áltro me n' hánno dáto paròla. 5. Ci andrémo insième, non è véro? Non mi díca di no. 6. Còsa ti lí? O che vuòi bruciár la cása? 7. Ed êcco che le apparì sùlla scóglija un non so che di biánco. 8. L' ha cambiáto tútto, ed óra s' òne mi piáce! 9. Non si va in quel luògo se non per vedére la fontána. 10. Quésto móndo è fátto a scále, chi le scénde e chi le sále.

3. *Translate into Italian:* 1. Do you go there oftener now? What? Yes, every eight or ten days. 2. I shall be there too, day after tomorrow, and I shall stay the whole week. 3. We saw certain things here that we didn't like at all. 4. I should never have believed that they would both leave me. 5. Take care that no one sees you start. 6. Each of you ought to give him something. 7. One must respect the rights of others. 8. One can't say, though, that such a work isn't worth anything. 9. I have but two, but if you want one of them, here it is. 10. He must have known them well; he has lived here for several years.

## LESSON 40. REVIEW

### EXERCISE 40

1. *Give the plural of each of the following combinations:* l' ani-  
mále grígio, il mío bráccio, del caffè nuòvo, nell' êstasi (*fem.*),  
l' óca facoltà, dálla túa famíglia, la máno biánca, l' operáio eròico,  
l' origine mística, quel páio, il gran pálco, col vécchio pòrco, la  
radíce profónda, l' última ríga, al bël rògo, lo schérzo còmico, sùllo  
còglio pittorésco, il buòn síndaco, il telegrámma lúngo, il súo zío.

2. *Translate:* lo ápra, l' avrémmo, me lo chièsero, li còglie,  
ondóttovi, ve lo conóbbe, gliélo dévono, ce lo día, dítele, lúi li ha  
divísi, êccotelo, n' êsce, gliélo féce portáre, vi fóste, ci piánse, l'ò  
essi lóro, l' avéva mòsso, muòiano lóro, vi nácque, offêrtoglielo,  
li sarèbbe párso, dovrèste piángerne, lo potémmo vedére, me lo  
ése, li rúppero, si vorrèbbe sapére, le scríssi, avrèbbe dovúto

seguírli, ci stéste, l' avránno strétto, lèi tacute, lo tēga lèi, li tr  
ci vāno, erano venúti, ci videro, ci ha vissúto.

3. *Translate into Italian:* will you be there?, they chose it, had come, he was dying there, give it to him, will they go there, he has been killed, do you know it?, do you know him?, they would have lost it, they ought to have opened it, he could not persuade him, it pleased him, I put it there, they made me read it, we shall remain there, it seemed to them, they have seen us, tell it to me, they wish it.

4. *Study these sentences:* 1. Mi rispóse di sì,<sup>1</sup> e che ci avrèbbe móto piacére. 2. Lúi piangéva piangéva, e gli álti stávano zítiti a guardárllo. 3. Sedévano attórno álla távola, impaziēti che si servísse colazióne. 4. Mórto, le párve assái piú gránde e buóno che non fósse mái párso vívo. 5. Finalménte riuscì a fárselo restituíre. Gli abitánti si rifugiávano su per i mónti, portándovi quel che avévano di mēglio.<sup>2</sup> 7. Nel succēdersi dégli avvenimēti in mēzzo ai quáli veníva innalzáto al sòglio, párve manifestársi la máno délla Providēza. 8. Prevedéva di dovérsene tornáre a casa, di lì a pòchi giòrni, pòvero com' éra venúto. 9. Che mólti di quēi tēmi esistessero nēlla poesía piú antíca, ci páre pienamēte dimostráto. 10. Li pērdo, chē sará di me? 11. Le stáva davánti, quási aspettándo che gli dicésse d' andársene. 12. Quēste pòche págine póste al principio serviránno di introduzióne a tútto il líbro. 13. Decíse di sentíre tranquillamēte ciò che állo zío piacésse d' aggiúngere. 14. Si trásse dal díto l' anēllo mágico, e se lo mise in bócca. Adēsso le spiegherò, mēglio ch' ío non facéssi allóra, che cósavogliámofáre. 16. Non pòsso non fárllo, nè vorrèi, ánche poténdolo non fárllo. 17. Úna societá che si fórmi cosí dēve finíre col l' ésser compósta di ribèlli. 18. Parlerémo prima di lúi, non perchè égli sía il piú antíco, ma perchè è il piú importánte. 19. Non si érano mái accòrti délle occhiáte di ammirazióne con cúi lúi guardáva. 20. Alcúni contadíni, credēdo che cercásse déi tesóri e persuási che avésse già quálche cósadi prezíoso in tásca, gli si avvicinárono per accertársene.

<sup>1</sup> *di sì*, 'that he would.'

<sup>2</sup> *quel che avēvan di mēglio*, 'the best of their belongings.'

5. *Translate into Italian:* 1. He told me that he had desired it for many years. 2. I should not have believed that you had spoken of it to him. 3. If I'm not mistaken, we shall be there in a few minutes. 4. I am surprised that they haven't called you yet. 5. I know him only by (*dî*) sight; I have seen him several times in the Public Gardens. 6. The prisoner has<sup>1</sup> escaped and has hidden himself in the wood; the peasants are protecting him. 7. I was sure of it, although her face did not betray any surprise. 8. Did they tell you when they would come to your house? 9. We could have given it to you, if we had known that you wanted it. 10. It isn't impossible that he has seen it, but I don't believe so.

<sup>1</sup> Translate by the proper form of *essere*.

## LESSON 41. OLD AND POETIC FORMS

Study section 3 (f) on p. 7, the second footnote on p. 11, the second footnote on p. 17, section 44 (a), the first footnote on p. 35, section 48 (e), the footnote on p. 39, section 63 (d), section 68, the forms given in section 92 in parentheses and footnotes, the verbs numbered 3 and 169, and those among nos. 24-125 that are marked Rare or Poetical; also the verbs *gíre* and *íre* given on p. 94.

### EXERCISE 41

1. Give the modern prose equivalents of: *lo giòrno, í capéi, táí re, e<sup>1</sup> párla, mel díce, nol crédo, sen va, amería, parlería, parlâro, parlerêbbono, parlôe, párlle, parlâr, cómpo,<sup>2</sup> sentío, fénno, féste, ácce, diêro, áve, avéa, avièno, ággia, arà, êi, cággiano, dêe, dênno, il réggo, vòlsi, puôte, pônno, poría, ênno, sùto, sêtc, fóra, fóro, fía, biêggo, còrre, tòrre, piagne, vègna.*

<sup>1</sup> Do not regard this *ne* as meaning 'of it.'

<sup>2</sup> Do not regard this form as present indicative.

2. Study these lines:

1. Or fía ch' êi vègna sólo? Áhi, mèglio fóra!
2. Udrássi allór chì puôte il ver narráre.
3. Mòrte êmmi il gíre, e il rimanér m' è mòrte.
4. Stávvi sèmpre — nol sái? — cúí stárvi líce.
5. Tòrmeli crédi? Chì diètti tal fórza?



6. La pátria amâr; liêti per lêi moríro.
7. Il véggio, o pármì, cói fratêi veníre.
8. Qual fuggitívo non vorría mostrármì.
9. "O felíci costór!" paréane díre.
10. "Lasciár ti débbo" pòi sen gía cantándo.

## ADDITIONAL EXERCISES IN PRONUNCIATION

### A

Acácia, accecáre, acciáio, acquaiuôlo, aggiúngere, áhi, allégro, a  
 cízia, archibúgio, artigliería, bicchiêre, bigliétto, Boccáccio, Boiár  
 bugía, búio, buòi, canzóne, Cardúcci, cascággini, Castiglióne, ca  
 lería, Cellíni, céncio, cêntottantôtto, cérchio, Checchína, chiacchi  
 chiaroscúro, Chiôggia, cicatríce, cíglio, cinquecênto, Civitavêcc  
 cògliere, corággio, corridóio, costituzionále, crescêndo, cugíno, cuôc  
 dolcézza, dóppio, dúnque, echeggiáre, faccióné, fasciáre, fazzolé  
 fiôcchi, físchio, fîoscio, Fogazzáro, Francésco, fruscio, fuorchè, g  
 ghiáccio, ghiáia, Ghirlandáio, giacíglio, ginôcchio, giòia, Giór  
 Girgênti, giudízio, grígio, guái, guêrra, Guído Guinizêlli, hái, hán  
 ho, ignôbile, incôgnito, inginocchiatóio, inscioglíbile, iridescên  
 Itália, laggiù, larghêzza, lenzuôlo, letteratúra, líscio, luccichìo, Mac  
 vèlli, menzôgna, merciáio, Michelángelo Buonarrôti, minchione  
 negôzio, Niccolò, noiálti, occhiácci, océano, orécchio, ossía, Pagliá  
 Palêrmo, paziênza, Petrárca, piázza, pieghivolézza, Pintoríccl  
 Poliziáno, Pollaiuôlo, Pozzuôli, può, quácquero, quaggiù, què  
 ricchêzza, richiamiámo, risuscitáre, ruôta, Sacchétti, sbêrcio, s  
 gliere, schermísce, schérzo, schiamázzo, sciagurató, sciôgli  
 sciupacchiáre, scricchiolìo, sdraiáto, sdrúcciolo, Sfôrza, sghê  
 Sicilia, singhiózzo, slánciano, squarciagóla, stizzísce, súdicio, tá  
 tréccia, tribù, úggia, uguále, uôvo, usciamo, vêcchio, viágg

### B

Un mío amíco raccontáva úna scêna curiósa álla quále éra st  
 presênte in cása di un giúdice di páce in Miláno, mólti ánni fa.  
 avéva trováto tra dúe litigánti, úno déi quáli peroráva caldamé  
 la súa cáusa; e quándo costúi ébbe finíto, il giúdice gli dísse: "Av  
 ragione."

“Ma, signór giúdice,” disse súbito l’ áltro, “lêi mi dêve sentíre che me, prîma di decidere.”

“È tróppo giústo,”<sup>1</sup> rispóse il giúdice, “díte pur su,<sup>2</sup> che v’ ascólto têtaménte.”

Allóra quéllo si mise con tánto piú impégno a far valére la súa usa, e ci riuscì cosí bène che il giúdice gl’i dísse: “Avéte ragióne che vói.”

C’ éra lì accánto<sup>3</sup> un súa bambíno di sètte o ôtto ánni, il quále, ocándó pián piáno con non so qual balóccho, non avéva lasciáto di áre ánche atténto álla discussióne, e a quel púnto, alzándó un visíno upefátto, esclamò: “Ma bábbó, non può éssere che ábbiano ragióne tutt’ e dúe.”

“Hái ragióne ánche tu,” gli dísse il giúdice.

MANZONI.

<sup>1</sup> *È tróppo giústo*, ‘That’s only fair.’

<sup>2</sup> *díte pur su*, ‘go ahead.’

<sup>3</sup> *accánto*, ‘in the room with them.’

## C

Che sía il Píncio nell’ óra che sul ponénte colór d’aráncio si dipínge gigantésca ómbra di San Piétro e del Vaticanó, non c’ è língua che pòssa díre. È un incánto, un’ éstasi, un sógno, è un confúso aváì d’ imménsi pensíeri, è un tumúlto di memòrie grandióse e di meránze arcáne, in cúì la ménte si pèrde, cóme in un máre sènza infínì. Guardándó il Gianícólo e Mònte Mário, che stánno in fáccia, ar di vedére nel fón-do dell’ angústa valláta passár silenziósi i sècoli a le nébbie délla séra, e un brívìdo córre per le óssa, cóme se da quel ndo si rizzássero tacitúrni e cúpi gli spèttri dei grándi, che résero múta e sácrá álle gènti quèsta tèrra fatále. Quèsto píccolo spázio, e lo sguárdo abbráccia sènza fática, è il púnto piú stòrico di tútto móm-do. Tútta la civiltà antíca s’ è condensáta fra quèsti còlli, e di ui, risaléndo il Téverc, s’ è distésa a conquistár la maggiór párte élla tèrra conosciúta. Di qui móssero gli esérciti invasóri, qui ne rono celebráti i triónfi, di qui si propagárono le lèggi e la língua che

fécero di gran pârte déllo stermináto impêro un pòpolo sólo. Quà pòi i vînti si ribellárono, la non vînta regína soggiogò còlle sperá di un' áltra víta tútti colóro che ricusávano il sùo domínio in qué e in nóme di Crísto risollevò l' impêro cadúto. Poichè le fúr strappâte di máno le ármí, regnò disarmáta: ricuperò con un vessíllo la coróná perdúta, nè fu méno gránde e potênte di prí. E l' embléma di quèsta stória, nòdo déi tēmpi anterióri e déi suc sívi, è là sòtto gli òcchi: un obelísco egiziáno, portáto in Róma gl' imperatóri románi e sormontáto dálla cróce, compēndia la st di tútta la civiltà.

GABÉLLI

## NOTE ON READING ITALIAN VERSE

In reading Italian verse the verbal stress is the same as in prose. There is no such artificial shifting of the stress as in Latin scansion.

Two adjacent vowels in the same word are usually to be pronounced as belonging to the same syllable, the voice gliding quickly from the first vowel to the second. They are however to be pronounced as belonging to separate syllables (1) when the first is *a*, *e*, or *o* and the second is stressed; (2) when the first of the two vowels is the last stressed vowel of the line; (3) in some other cases (there is one instance in Exercise E, line 4: *trionfále*).

Two vowels standing one at the end of a word and the other at the beginning of the next word and not separated by a mark of punctuation are usually to be pronounced, also, as belonging to the same syllable. (There are no exceptions in these exercises. Exceptions occur when the first of the two vowels is stressed or immediately preceded by a stressed vowel, and in some other cases.) If the two vowels are different, the voice glides quickly from the first to the second; if they are identical, they are pronounced as a single long vowel.

Two adjacent vowels separated by a mark of pronunciation are to be pronounced as belonging to separate syllables; though as a matter of technical versification they are arbitrarily reckoned as belonging to the same syllable, unless they are of one of the types referred to as exceptional.

## D

Lúngo la stráda védi su la siêpe  
 rídere a mázzi le vermíglie bácche:  
 nei cámpi aráti tórnano al presêpe  
 tárde le vácche.

Viên per la stráda un pòvero che il lènto  
 pássò tra fòglie strídule trascína:  
 nei cámpi intuóna una fanciúlla al vènto:

Fióre di spína! . . .

PÁSCOLI.

Line 1. *su la*: the prepositions which normally contract with a following definite article are in verse often uncontracted.

4. *tárde* is a predicate adjective used with adverbial force: 'slowly.'  
*uóna*: see section 59 (b).

8. *Fióre di spína*: these are the first words of a peasant song.

## E

Liêvi e biánche a la plága occidentále  
 Ván le núbi: a le víc ríde e su 'l fòro  
 Úmido il ciêlo, ed a l' umán lavóro  
 Salúta il sól, beníigno, trionfále.

Lêva in rôseo fulgór la cattedrále  
 Le mílle gúglie biánche e i sánti d' ôro,  
 Osannándo irraggiáta: intórno, il còro  
 Brúno de' fálchi ágita i grídi e l' ále.

Tál, pòi ch' amór co 'l dólce ríso vía  
 Ráse le núbi che gravârmi tánto,  
 Sì rilêva nel sól l' ánima mía,

E moltéplice a lêi sorríde il sánto  
 Ideál de la víta: è un' armonía  
 Ógni pensiêro, ed ógni sênsò un cánto.

CARDÚCCI.

Line 2. 'l is a form of *il* often used in verse.

6. *Ráse* is a past absolute used with the force of a present perfect: 'swept.' — *gravârmi*: see section 68 (d).





# ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

This vocabulary contains all Italian words appearing in exercise sections involving translation from the Italian and all words appearing in Exercises B-E on pp. 150-153, with the following exceptions: articles, cardinal and ordinal numerals, possessive and personal pronouns, and words occurring only in the following exercise sections: Ex. 28 sect. 2, Ex. 30 sect. 2, Ex. 31 sect. 1, Ex. 34 sect. 1, Ex. 35 sect. 1, Ex. 36 sect. 1, Ex. 39 sect. 1. The meanings of all words occurring in these sections are given in the portions of the Grammar assigned for the lessons in question. The irregular verb forms occurring in Exercises B-E (except the forms of *avere* and *essere*) are separately entered here.

The position of the secondary stress is indicated only in words in which it falls upon an open e or o.

Nouns ending in o are masculine and those ending in a are feminine, unless indication to the contrary is given.

## A

a, to, toward, at, in, on, upon, for, by, of; a *fâre*, doing, if one does; al *fâre*, on doing, when one docs.

abbracciâre, to embrace.

abitânte, *m.*, inhabitant.

âbito, coat.

accadêre, to happen.

accânto, — a, beside.

accattâre, to beg.

accertârsi, to make certain.

accogliere, to welcome.

accôrgersi di, to notice.

accûsa, accusation.

âcqua, water.

addîo, good-by.

adêssô, now.

affâre, *m.*, affair.

affâtto, entirely.

afferrâre, to seize.

affêtto, affection.

Âffrica, Africa.

aggiûngere, to add.

agitâre, to agitate, wave.

ah, ah; ah sî?, is that so?

âhi, ah.

aiutâre, to help.

aiûto, help.

âla, wing.

âlbero, tree.

alcûno, some; *pron.*, anyone.

alloggiâre, to lodge.

allôra, then; da — in pôi, thereafter.

almêno, at least.

âlto, high, tall; in —, high up.

altrimênti, otherwise.

âltro, other; l' ûno e l' —, both.

alzâre, to raise; alzâto, up.

amâre, to love, be fond of.

Amêrica, America.

amicîzia, friendship.

amîco, friend.

ammalârsi, to fall sick.

ammiraziône, *f.*, admiration.

amôre, *m.*, love.

ânche, also, too, even, at the same time.

ancôra, still, yet, again, even, more.

andáre, to go; andársene, to go off or away; *va fátto così*, it must be done so.

anêllo, ring.

angústo, narrow.

ánima, soul.

ánno, year; *di dúe ánni*, two years old; *avére dúe ánni*, to be two years old.

anterióre, former.

antíco, ancient, old.

ánzi, even, rather, on the contrary.

apparíre, to appear.

appéna, scarcely, as soon as.

applaudíre, to applaud.

apríre, aprírsi, to open.

aráncio, orange.

aráre, to plough.

arcáno, secret.

ária, air; *avér l' —*, to seem.

Ariôsto, Ariosto.

ármí, *f. pl.*, arms.

armonía, harmony.

arriváre, to arrive, get; — *a*, to reach.

ascoltáre, to listen, listen to.

aspettáre, to wait, wait for, expect.

aspétto, aspect, appearance.

assái, enough, very, considerably, much.

assênte, absent.

atténtamênte, attentively.

attênto, attentive, careful.

átto, act, attitude.

attórno, — *a*, around.

auguráre, to wish.

aurôra, dawn.

austriaco, Austrian.

automóbile, *m.*, automobile.

autóre, *m.*, author.

autúnno, autumn.

avánti, forward, come in.

avére, to have, possess, hold; *da*, I have to, I must. *Other idioms in which avére appears are registered only under other words concerned.*

avvenimênto, event.

avveníre, to happen; *n. m.*, future.

avvertíre, to warn.

avvicinársi *a*, to approach.

avvíso, warning.

avvocáto, lawyer.

azióne, *f.*, action.

azzúrro, blue.

## E

bábbo, papa.

bácca, berry.

badáre, to notice, take care, pay attention.

balôcco, toy.

bambíno, child, small boy.

bastáre, to be enough, suffice.

battágliá, battle.

báttere, to beat, strike.

baúle, *m.*, trunk.

bèllo, beautiful, fair, handsome, pretty, fine.

benchè, although.

bêne, well; *n. m.*, good thing, happiness; *far —*, to do good.

benedíre, to bless.

benígnó, benign.

beníssimo, very well.

bére, to drink.

biáncó, white.

blasimáre, to blame, condemn.

bicchière, *m.*, glass.

bigliétto, ticket, bill.

biliárdo, billiards.

bióndo, blond, golden.

bisognare, to be necessary.  
 bisogno, need; *avér — di*, to need.  
 bocca, mouth.  
 bottone, *m.*, button.  
 braccio, arm.  
 brivido, shudder.  
 bruciare, to burn.  
 bruno, brown, dark.  
 buio, dark; *n.*, darkness.  
 buono, good.

## C

cadere, to fall.  
 caffè, *m.*, coffee.  
 calare, to sink, set.  
 caldamente, warmly, eagerly.  
 caldo, hot, warm.  
 cambiare, to change.  
 camera, room.  
 caminétto, fireplace.  
 camino, chimney.  
 campo, field.  
 cantare, to sing.  
 canto (1), song.  
 canto (2), corner.  
 capéllo, hair.  
 capire, to understand.  
 capitolare, to capitulate, surrender.  
 capitolo, chapter.  
 cappella, chapel.  
 cappello, hat.  
 carattere, *m.*, character.  
 carico, laden.  
 carne, *f.*, meat.  
 caro, dear.  
 carta, paper.  
 casa, house, home.  
 cattedrale, *f.*, cathedral.  
 cattivo, bad.  
 causa, cause, case.

cedere, to yield.  
 celebrare, to celebrate.  
 centesimo, centime.  
 centinaio, hundred.  
 centro, centre.  
 cercare, to seek, search, look for, try.  
 certo, certain; *per —*, for a certainty.  
 che, *conj.*, that, because, and, than; *fatto — ebbe*, when he had made; *ecco —*, suddenly; *non —*, to say nothing of; *se non —*, if . . . not, but; *non . . . —*, only; *pòi —*, when; *sì — è buono*, it's very good indeed; *o —*, *used without translatable force to introduce a question.*  
 che, *pron.*, what, what a, who, which, that, when; — *côsa*, what; *ciò —*, *quello —*, what, that; *un non so — di buono*, something good, a certain goodness.  
 chi, who, he who, one who, if anyone; — . . . —, some . . . others; *di —*, whose.  
 chiamare, to call; *côme si chiama?*, what is the name of?  
 chiaro, clear, bright.  
 chiave, *f.*, key.  
 chiedere, to ask.  
 chiesa, church.  
 chiudere, to close, shut.  
 ci, here, there, in it; *often pleonastic.*  
 cieco, blind; *n.*, blind man.  
 cielo, sky, heaven.  
 ciò, that; — *che*, what, that.  
 cioè, that is.

- città, city.  
 cittadino, citizen.  
 civiltà, civilization.  
 clássico, classic.  
 co 'l, *poetic*, = col.  
 còdice, *m.*, manuscript.  
 cògliere, to gather.  
 colazione, *f.*, lunch.  
 còlle, *m.*, hill.  
 colóre, *m.*, color; — d' arancio, orange-colored.  
 colóro, those.  
 colúi, he.  
 combáttere, to fight.  
 cóme, how, as, like.  
 cominciáre, to begin.  
 compagna, company.  
 compendiáre, to sum up.  
 compiacérsi, to take pleasure.  
 compíre, to complete, finish.  
 compliménto, compliment.  
 compórre, to compose.  
 compráre, to buy.  
 con, with, by, in, on, to.  
 concédere, to concede, grant.  
 condensáre, to condense, concentrate.  
 condúrre, to lead.  
 confétti, *m. pl.*, candy.  
 confíne, *m.*, limit.  
 confóndere, to confuse.  
 conoscêza, acquaintance.  
 nóscere, to know, make the acquaintance of, recognize.  
 conquistáre, to conquer.  
 consíglío, counsel.  
 contadíno, peasant.  
 contentáre, to content, satisfy.  
 continuáre, to continue.  
 contínuo, continual.  
 cóntro, — di, against.  
 conversazióne, *f.*, conversation.  
 corággio, courage; da far —, encourage.  
 còro, choir.  
 coróna, crown.  
 coronáre, to crown.  
 córrere, to run, overrun.  
 còrte, *f.*, court.  
 cortesía, courtesy.  
 córto, short.  
 còsa, thing, what; che —, what; ha quáliche — di buòno, there is something good about it.  
 così, so, such.  
 costáre, to cost.  
 còsto, cost.  
 costóro, they.  
 costúi, he.  
 crédere, to believe, think.  
 créscere, to grow, increase.  
 cristiáno, Christian.  
 Crísto, Christ.  
 cróce, *f.*, cross.  
 crudeltà, cruelty.  
 cucíre, to sew; mácchina da —, sewing-machine.  
 cugíno, cousin.  
 cugíno, cousin.  
 cúí, whom, which, to which, he to whom.  
 cuóre, *m.*, heart.  
 cúpo, gloomy.  
 cúra, care.  
 curióso, curious.

## D

da, from, by, for, with, to, of, as like, such as to; da lontáno, in the distance; da prêso, near; da mangiáre, something or any thing to eat.

Dánte, *m.*, Dante.  
 dáre, to give, devote; — *del*, to call; *dársi per vinto*, to give in.  
 datáre, to date.  
 davánti, — *a*, before, in front of.  
 decidere, to decide.  
 decisíone, *f.*, decision.  
 denáro, money.  
 déntro, within, in.  
 desiderábile, desirable.  
 desideráre, to desire.  
 desidério, desire.  
 destíno, destiny.  
 déstra, right hand, right.  
 dêve, *3rd sing. pres. ind. of dovere*.  
*di*, of, about, with, from, by, in, to, than, as; *dáre del*, to call; *díre di sì*, to say 'yes'; *al di là di*, beyond; *del páne*, some bread.  
 diávolo, devil.  
 diétro, — *a*, behind.  
 difétto, defect.  
 difícilcile, difficult.  
 difficoltà; difficulty, trouble.  
 dimenticáre, to forget.  
 dimostráre, to demonstrate, prove.  
 dipíngere, to paint.  
*díre*, to say, tell; — *di sì*, to say 'yes'; *volér* —, to mean.  
 disarmáto, unarmed.  
 discussíone, *f.*, discussion.  
 disgrázia, misfortune.  
 dispiacére, to displease; *mi dispiáce*, I'm sorry, I don't like.  
*dísse*, *3rd sing. past abs. of díre*.  
 distêndere, to distend; *refl.*, to reach out.  
*distêso*, *pp. of distêndere*.  
 distínguere, to distinguish.  
*díte*, *2d pl. inv. of díre*.  
 díto, finger.

divertíre, to divert, amuse.  
 divídere, to divide.  
 divíno, divine.  
 dólce, sweet.  
 dolére, to pain.  
 domandáre, to ask, ask for.  
 dománi, tomorrow.  
 doménica, Sunday.  
 domínio, dominion.  
 dôнна, woman.  
 dóno, gift.  
 dópo, after, afterward, since.  
 dormíre, to sleep.  
 dóve, where.  
 dovére, to owe, be obliged; *dêvo*, I am to, I have to, I must; *dovrêi*, I ought to.  
 dúro, hard.

## E

*e*, and, both; *le dúe e diêci*, ten minutes past two; *più . . . e più*, the more . . . the more.  
*êcco*, here is, there is; — *che*, suddenly.  
*ed*, and.  
 egiziáno, Egyptian.  
 êh, eh.  
 elêggere, to elect.  
 emblêma, *m.*, emblem.  
 energía, energy.  
 entráre, to enter, go in, get in, come in.  
 esageráre, to exaggerate.  
 esáme, *m.*, examination.  
 esclamáre, to exclaim.  
 esêrcito, army.  
 esístere, to exist.  
 espressíone, *f.*, expression, remark.  
 esprimere, to express.  
 êssere, to be, become; *refl.*, to be.



èst, *m.*, east.

èstasi, *f.*, ecstasy.

età, age.

Eurôpa, Europe.

## F

facchino, porter.

faccia, face; di —, in —, opposite.

fácil, easy.

fálco, falcon.

falsità, falseness.

fálso, false.

fâme, *f.*, hunger.

fanciúlla, girl.

fanciúllo, boy, child.

fantásma, *m.*, phantom.

fâre, to do, make, have, let, take, say, be, act, serve as; *refl.*, to become, get; lâscia — a me, leave it to me; dólce — niênte, sweet idleness; sul — di, toward; fa, ago. *Other idioms in which fâre appears are registered only under the other words concerned.*

fatále, fateful.

fatica, fatigue, difficulty.

fâtto, fact.

favóre, *m.*, favor.

febbráio, February.

fêbbre, *f.*, fever.

fécero, *3rd pl. past abs. of fâre.*

felíce, happy.

ferîre, to wound.

férmo, firm, certain.

fêrro, iron.

figlio, son.

filâre, to spin.

filosofía, philosophy.

finalménte, finally, at last.

finchè, as long as, until; — . . . non, until.

fine, *f.*, end.

finêstra, window.

fîngere, to feign; fînto, fictitious.

finîre, to finish, end; — coll' ar dâre, finally to go.

fîno a, until.

fîóre, *m.*, flower.

fiorîno, florin, *an obsolete coin worth about \$2.50.*

Firênze, *f.*, Florence.

fiúme, *m.*, river.

fôglia, leaf.

fólto, thick.

fondâre, to found.

fôndo, depth, trough, hollow, basin.

fontâna, fountain.

forestiêre, *m.*, foreigner, stranger.

formâre, to form.

fornîre, to furnish; — di, to give.

fôro, forum, market place.

fôrse, perhaps.

fôrte, strong.

fortézza, fort.

fortunâto, fortunate.

fôrza, force, strength; con —, have.

fotografía, photograph.

fra, between, among, among, through.

francése, French.

frásca, bush.

frâse, *f.*, sentence.

fratêllo, brother.

fréd-do, cold; fâre —, to be cold.

frétta, haste.

frútto, fruit.

fuggîre, to flee.

fuggitîvo, fugitive.

fulgóre, *m.*, glow.

fumâre, to smoke.

fuôco, fire.

fuorchè, except.

## G

gallería, gallery.  
 garantíre, to guarantee.  
 gènte, *f.*, people, nation.  
 gentíle, gentle, polite, kind.  
 già, already.  
 giacére, to lie.  
 giallo, yellow.  
 Gianicolo, Janiculum.  
 giardíno, garden.  
 gigantésco, gigantic.  
 ginòcchio, knee.  
 giocáre, to play.  
 giòia, joy.  
 giornále, *m.*, journal, newspaper.  
 giòrno, day; *per* —, daily.  
 giòvane, young; *n. m.*, young man.  
 Giovánni, *m.*, John.  
 giòvine, young.  
 giovinézza, youth.  
 giráre, to whirl.  
 gíre, *poetical*, to go; *gírsene*, to go away.  
 gíta, trip, excursion.  
 giudicáre, to judge.  
 giúdice, *m.*, judge, justice.  
 giúngere, to join, clasp; — *a*, to reach.  
 giuráre, to swear.  
 giústo, just, fair.  
 godére, to enjoy.  
 governáre, to govern.  
 gránde, great, large, big; *n. m.*, great man; *fáre un* — *fréddo*, to be very cold.  
 grandióso, grand.  
 graváre, to weigh down, oppress.  
 graveménte, gravely, seriously.  
 grázia, favor; *pl.*, thanks.  
 grído, cry.  
 guadagnáre, to earn, gain, win.

guánto, glove.  
 guardáre, to look, look at, watch  
 gúglia, pinnacle.

## I

idéa, idea.  
 ideále, *m.*, ideal.  
 ieri, yesterday.  
 illúdere, to deceive.  
 illustríssimo, excellency.  
 imménso, immense.  
 imparáre, to learn.  
 impaziénte, impatient.  
 impedíre, to hinder.  
 impégno, pledge, earnestness.  
 imperatóre, *m.*, emperor.  
 impêro, empire.  
 importánte, important.  
 impossíbile, impossible.  
 in, in, at, to; *da allóra in pòi*, thereafter.  
 incánto, enchantment.  
 inchíno, bow.  
 incontráre, to meet.  
 indoráre, to gild.  
 indúrre, to induce, lead.  
 inêrzia, inertia.  
 infátti, in fact.  
 ingegnêre, *m.*, engineer.  
 Inghiltêrra, England.  
 inginocchióni, kneeling.  
 innalzáre, to raise.  
 insegnáre, to teach.  
 insiême, together.  
 interessánte, interesting.  
 interêsse, *m.*, interest.  
 intonáre, to intone, start singing.  
 intórno, round about.  
 introduzióne, *f.*, introduction.  
 inútile, useless.

invasóre, *m.*, invader; *adj.*, invading.

invéce, instead.

invêrno, winter.

invisibile, invisible.

íra, anger.

irraggiáto, radiant.

irrequiêto, anxious.

Itália, Italy.

italiáno, Italian.

## L

là, there; al di là di, beyond.

lágó, lake.

lágrima, tear.

lasciáre, to leave, let, fail; lásclia fáre a me, leave it to me.

látte, *m.*, milk.

lavoráre, to work.

lavóro, labor, work.

légge, *f.*, law.

lêggere, to read.

lênto, slow, quiet, gentle.

lêttera, letter.

leváre, to raise, rise.

lezióne, *f.*, lesson.

lì, there; di lì a, within.

libertà, liberty, freedom.

líbro, book.

lícere, *poetical*, to be permitted.

liêto, glad.

liêve, light.

língua, tongue, language.

líra, lira, *a coin worth about 20 cents*.

litigánte, *m.*, litigant.

lontáno, distant, far; da —, in the distance.

lúme, *m.*, light.

lunedì, Monday.

lúngo, *adj.*, long.

lúngo, *prep.*, along.

luôgo, place.

## M

ma, but.

mácchina, machine.

mádre, *f.*, mother.

maggióre, greater.

mágico, magic.

mái, never, ever; non . . . never.

maláto, sick.

malattía, sickness, trouble.

mále, badly, ill; *n. m.*, harm, i

far —, to hurt.

mandáre, to send.

mangiáre, to eat.

maniêra, manner.

manifestáre, to manifest.

máno, *f.*, hand.

máre, *m.*, sea.

María, Mary.

Mário, *proper name*.

matíta, pencil.

matína, morning.

mázso, cluster.

mêdico, doctor.

medioevále, mediaeval.

Mediterráneo, Mediterranean.

mêglio, better, best.

mêla, apple.

memória, memory.

menáre, to lead, take.

mêno, less; le dúe — diêci, two minutes of two; non potére

— di non, not to be able

help; i —, the minority.

mênte, *f.*, mind; veníre in —, to occur.

mêntre, while.

meravigliáre, to surprise.  
 mercáto, market.  
 mescoláre, to mingle.  
 mése, *m.*, month.  
 metà, half.  
 mettere, to put, set; *refl.*, to begin.  
 mezzo, half; in — a, amid; fino a —, until the middle of; le due e —, half past two.  
 mezzogiórno, noon; dopo —, P. M.  
 mica: non . . . —, not.  
 Michelángelo, Michelangelo.  
 migliore, better, best.  
 Miláno, *f.*, Milan.  
 minacciáre, to threaten.  
 minaccióso, threatening.  
 mise, 3rd *sing. past abs. of* mettere.  
 misterióso, mysterious.  
 móderno, modern.  
 moglie, *f.*, wife.  
 múltéplice, manifold.  
 moltissimo, very much, a great deal of.  
 mólto, much, very much; *adv.*, much, very; far — mále, to hurt badly.  
 mómento, moment.  
 móndo, world; non sapére in che — si sía, not to know where one is, to be completely bewildered.  
 montáre, to mount, go up.  
 mónte, *m.*, mountain, mount.  
 morire, to die.  
 mormorio, murmur.  
 móрте, *f.*, death.  
 móssero, 3rd *pl. past abs. of* muovere.  
 mostráre, to show; *refl.*, to appear.  
 mucchio, pile.

muovere, to move, start.  
 múro, wall.

## N

Nápoli, *f.*, Naples.  
 narráre, to narrate, tell.  
 nascere, to be born or formed.  
 Natále, *m.*, Christmas.  
 nazióne, *f.*, nation.  
 ne, thence; andársene, to go off or away.  
 nè, nor, neither; non . . . nè . . . nè, neither . . . nor.  
 neánche, non . . . —, not even.  
 nébbia, mist.  
 necessário, necessary.  
 negáre, to deny, refuse.  
 nemíco, enemy.  
 nemméno, non . . . —, not even.  
 néro, black.  
 nessúno, no one; non . . . —, not anyone.  
 néve, *f.*, snow.  
 nído, nest.  
 niénte, non . . . —, nothing, not anything; dólce far —, sweet idleness.  
 no, no, not.  
 nódo, knot, link.  
 nóme, *m.*, name.  
 non, not, no; — . . . che, — . . . se —, only; — che, to say nothing of; se —, except; se — che, if . . . not, but; più . . . che —, more than; — potére —, not to be able to avoid or fail; — potére a méno di —, not to be able to help; un — so che di buono, something good, a certain goodness; — so quále, some . . . or other.

nondiméno, nevertheless.  
 nônnà, grandmother.  
 notízia, notice, news.  
 nôtte, *f.*, night.  
 núbe, *f.*, cloud.  
 núlla, non . . . —, nothing.  
 número, number.  
 nuócere, to hurt.  
 nuôvo, new; *che c' è di* —?,  
 what's the news?

## O

o, *conj.*, or, either.  
 o, *interj.*, O; o *che*, used without  
*translatable force to introduce a*  
*question.*  
 obbligâre, to oblige.  
 obelísco, obelisk.  
 occasióne, *f.*, occasion.  
 occhiâli, *m. pl.*, glasses.  
 occhiâta, glance.  
 ôcchio, eye.  
 occidentâle, western.  
 occupâre, to occupy.  
 ôdio, hatred.  
 offrîre, to offer.  
 ôggi, today.  
 ôgni, every.  
 ôh, oh.  
 ômbra, shadow.  
 ombrêllo, umbrella.  
 onorâre, to honor.  
 onóre, *m.*, honor.  
 ôpera, work.  
 operâio, workman.  
 opinióne, *f.*, opinion.  
 ôra, *adv.*, now; or —, just.  
 ôra, *n.*, hour, time.  
 ôrfano, orphan.  
 ôro, gold.  
 osannâre, to sing hosanna.

ôsso, bone.  
 oziôso, idle.

## P

pâce, *f.*, peace.  
 pâtre, *m.*, father.  
 padrône, *m.*, master.  
 pagâre, to pay.  
 página, page.  
 palázzo, palace.  
 pállido, pale.  
 pâne, *m.*, bread.  
 paniêre, *m.*, basket.  
 parêre, to seem, appear.  
 parlâre, to speak.  
 parôla, word.  
 pâte, *f.*, part.  
 partîre, to depart, leave; — *di*,  
 leave.  
 partîta, match, game.  
 passâre, to pass.  
 pâsso, step.  
 patérno, of one's parents.  
 pâtria, fatherland.  
 paúra, fear.  
 páusa, pause.  
 paziênza, patience.  
 peccâto, sin; *interj.*, too bad.  
 péna, trouble.  
 pénna, pen.  
 pensâre, to think.  
 pensiêro, thought.  
 pentîrsi, to repent.  
 per, for, through, along, in, on, a  
 as for; — *quânto s'ia buôn*  
 good as it is; *stâre* —, to be  
 about to.  
 péra, pear.  
 perchê, why, because, in order  
 that; *n. m.*, reason.  
 pêrdere, to lose.



- perfêttamênte, perfectly, exactly.  
 perícolo, danger.  
 permêttère, to permit, allow.  
 però, however, though.  
 peroràre, to plead.  
 persuadêre, to persuade, convince.  
 pêsce, *m.*, fish.  
 pêzzo, piece.  
 piacêre, to please; *n. m.*, pleasure,  
 favor; avér —, to be glad; mi  
 piace, I like.  
 piângere, to weep, cry, weep for.  
 piáno, smooth, slow; *adv.*, softly,  
 quietly.  
 picchiàre, to knock.  
 piccolo, little, small.  
 piêde, *m.*, foot; a piêdi, on foot.  
 piênamênte, fully.  
 piêno, full.  
 pietà, pity.  
 Piêtro, Peter.  
 pigliàre, to take, catch.  
 Píncio, Pincian Hill.  
 pistòla, pistol.  
 pittóre, *m.*, painter.  
 pittúra, painting.  
 più, more, most, longer, again; —  
 . . . e —, the more . . . the more;  
 non . . . —, not, no, not any;  
 i —, the majority.  
 piuttòsto, rather.  
 plága, sky.  
 po', *abbreviated form of pôco*.  
 pochíssimo, very little.  
 pôco, little, a little.  
 poesía, poetry, poem.  
 poêta, *m.*, poet.  
 poi, then; da allóra in —, there-  
 after; — che, when.  
 poichè, after.  
 pôlso, pulse.  
 ponênte, *m.*, west.  
 pônte, *m.*, bridge.  
 pôpolo, people.  
 pôrre, to put, place, send.  
 pôrta, door.  
 portàre, to carry, bring, take,  
 show.  
 pôssa, *3rd sing. pres. subj. of*  
 potêre.  
 possíbile, possible.  
 pôsto, place.  
 potênte, powerful.  
 potêre, to be able; pôsso, I can, I  
 may; non — non, not to be  
 able to avoid *or* fail; non —  
 a méno di non, not to be able  
 to help.  
 poverétta, poor woman.  
 poverétto, poor fellow.  
 pôvero, poor; *n.*, poor man.  
 pránzo, dinner.  
 praticàre, to practice, associate.  
 preferíre, to prefer.  
 preghierà, prayer, entreaty.  
 prêmère, to press.  
 prêndere, prêndersi, to take.  
 presentàre, to present.  
 presênte, present.  
 presêpe, *m.*, stable.  
 prêssò, da —, near.  
 prestàre, to lend.  
 prêsto, quickly, soon, early.  
 pretêndere, to expect.  
 prevedêre, to foresee.  
 prezíoso, valuable.  
 prêzzo, price.  
 prîma, first, before; — di, — che,  
 before.  
 princípîo, beginning.  
 profôndo, deep, low.  
 proibíre, to forbid.

promettere, to promise.  
 pronto, ready, quick.  
 propagare, to spread abroad.  
 proseguire, to continue.  
 proteggere, to protect, patronize.  
 provvidenza, providence.  
 pubblicare, to publish.  
 punto, point; *adv.*, at all.  
 può, *3rd sing. pres. ind. of potere*.  
 purchè, provided that, if only.  
 pure, yet, just; — troppo, unfortunately.

## Q

quadro, picture.  
 qualche, some, a few; ha — cosa di buono, there is something good about it.  
 qualcheduno, someone.  
 qualcosa, something.  
 quale, which, what, as; il —, who, which; non so —, some . . . or other.  
 qualità, quality.  
 quando, when.  
 quanto, how much, as much, as much as, all that, that, as; per — sia buono, good as it is.  
 quarto, quarter.  
 quasi, almost, as if.  
 quello, that, that one, the one, the, he; — che, what, that.  
 questo, this, this one.  
 qui, here; di —, hence.

## R

raccòlta, collection.  
 raccontare, to narrate, tell, tell about.  
 radere, to shave, sweep.  
 ragazza, girl.

ragazzo, boy.  
 ragione, *f.*, reason; aver —, to right.  
 rase, *3rd sing. past abs. of rade*.  
 re, *m.*, king.  
 regalare, to give.  
 regina, queen.  
 regnare, to reign.  
 rendere, to render, give back, make.  
 resero, *3rd pl. past abs.*  
 rendere.  
 restare, to stay.  
 restituire, to give back.  
 ribellarsi, to rebel.  
 ribelle, *m.*, rebel.  
 ricchezza, riches, wealth.  
 ricco, rich.  
 ricevere, to receive, get.  
 richiedere, to ask.  
 riconoscere, to recognize.  
 ricuperare, to recover, regain.  
 ricusare, to refuse, deny.  
 ridere, to laugh.  
 rifiutare, to refuse.  
 rifugiarsi, to take refuge.  
 riguardare, to look again, regard, concern.  
 rilevare, to raise again; *refl.*, rise again.  
 rimanere, to remain, be left, be.  
 rimettere, to replace; *refl.*, to gain.  
 rincrescere, to displease; mi rincresce, I'm sorry.  
 rincrescimento, regret.  
 ringraziare, to thank.  
 ripetere, to repeat.  
 risalire, to go up.  
 riso, smile.  
 risollevare, to raise again.  
 rispettare, to respect.

rispétto, respect.  
 rispóndere, to answer, reply.  
 rispóse, *3rd sing. past abs. of*  
*rispóndere.*  
 ritárdo, delay; in —, late.  
 ritiráre, to draw back.  
 riuscíre, to go out again, succeed.  
 rivedére, to see again.  
 rizzáre, to raise; *refl.*, to rise.  
 Róma, Rome.  
 románo, Roman.  
 románzo, novel.  
 rómpere, to break.  
 rósa, rose.  
 róseo, rosy.  
 róssó, red.  
 rotóndo, round.

## S

sácro, sacred.  
 salíre, to go up.  
 salóttö, parlor.  
 salutáre, — a, to greet.  
 salúte, *f.*, health.  
 sángua, *m.*, blood.  
 sáno, sane, safe.  
 sánto, holy; saint.  
 sapére, to know, find out, know  
 how, be able; far —, to tell;  
 non — in che móndo si sía, not  
 to know where one is, to be  
 completely bewildered; un non  
 so che di buòno, something  
 good, a certain goodness; non  
 so quále, some . . . or other.  
 scála, stair.  
 scárpa, shoe.  
 scéna, scene.  
 scéndere, to go down.  
 sciócco, fool; da —, foolishly.

sciógliere, to untie, remove.  
 sciópero, strike; fare —, to strike  
 scodèlla, bowl.  
 scópa, broom.  
 scopáre, to sweep.  
 scordársi di, to forget.  
 scórso, last.  
 scrivanía, desk.  
 scrívere, to write.  
 scuòla, school.  
 scúro, dark.  
 se, if, whether; se non, except;  
 se non che, if . . . not, but;  
 non . . . se non, only.  
 sêcolo, century.  
 secóndo, according to.  
 sedére, to sit; sedúto, sitting.  
 sêggiola, chair.  
 segnáre, to mark.  
 seguênte, following.  
 seguíre, to follow.  
 seguitáre, to follow; — a, to  
 keep on.  
 sêmplice, simple.  
 sêmpre, always.  
 sénno, wisdom.  
 sensazióne, *f.*, sensation.  
 sênsó, sense.  
 sentíre, to feel, hear, listen, listen  
 to; sentíte, I say, tell me.  
 sênza, — che, without.  
 sêra, evening.  
 sêrva, servant.  
 servíre, to serve.  
 servitóre, *m.*, servant.  
 sête, *f.*, thirst; avér —, to be  
 thirsty.  
 settimána, week.  
 sevêro, severe.  
 sfôrzo, effort.  
 sguárdo, glance.

sì, yes, so; ah sì?, is that so?; sì  
che è buono, it's very good  
indeed.

siêpe, *f.*, hedge.

signóra, lady.

signóre, *m.*, lord, gentleman,  
master, Mr.

silenzióso, silent, still.

símile, similar, like, such.

simpático, sympathetic, agreeable.

sincêro, sincere.

Sistína, Sistine.

so, *1st sing. pres. ind. of sapére.*

società, society.

soffrîre, to suffer.

soggiogáre, to subjugate.

sôglia, threshold.

sôglio, throne.

sôgno, dream.

soldáto, soldier.

sôllo, penny, cent.

sóle, *m.*, sun, sunlight.

solére, to be wont.

sólo, alone, single, only.

soltáto, only.

sorêlla, sister.

sormontáre, to surmount.

Sorrênto, Sorrento.

sorrîdere, to smile.

sospettáre, to suspect.

sótto, beneath.

spagnuòlo, Spanish; *n.*, Spaniard.

spaventáre, to frighten.

spázio, space.

spedále, *m.*, hospital.

spedîre, to send.

speránza, hope.

speráre, to hope.

spésso, often.

spêttro, spectre, ghost.

spiegáre, to explain.

spína, thorn.

spírito, spirit.

spôsa, wife.

spôso, bridegroom; *adj.*, engaged.

stamáne, this morning.

stánno, *3rd pl. pres. ind. of stáre.*

stanôtte, last night.

stánza, room.

stáre, to stand, be, stay, sit;

*per*, to be about to.

staséra, this evening.

státo, state.

stazióne, *f.*, station.

stermináto, boundless.

stêssso, same, self.

stôffa, stuff, goods.

stôria, history, story.

stôrico, historic, historical.

stráda, street, road.

stráno, strange.

strappáre, to snatch, tear.

strétto, narrow.

strîdulo, harsh, rustling.

strîngere, to bind, press.

studênte, *m.*, student.

studiáre, to study.

stúdio, study.

stupefátto, astonished.

stupêndo, fine.

su, up, on, upon.

súbito, at once; — *che*, as soon

succêdere, to succeed, follow.

happen; succêdersi, *n. m.*, succession.

successívo, succeeding.

suòno, sound.

superióre, superior.

## T

tacére, to be silent or still.

tacitúrno, taciturn, silent.

ale, such, so.  
 ánto, so much, as, so; — *più*, all  
 the more.  
 árdi, late.  
 árdo, slow.  
 áisca, pocket.  
 áivola, table.  
 áéatro, theatre.  
 edésco, German.  
 telefonáre, to telephone.  
 éma, *m.*, theme.  
 emére, to fear, be afraid.  
 èmpo, time, weather; *tánto* —,  
 so long.  
 enére, to hold; — *per fêrmo*, to  
 be certain; — *vívo*, to keep up.  
 èrra, earth, ground, land, world.  
 erríbile, terrible.  
 erróre, *m.*, terror.  
 esôro, treasure.  
 èsta, head.  
 évere, *m.*, Tiber.  
 ingere, to tinge, stain.  
 occáre, to touch, feel.  
 ògliere, to take; — *a*, to take  
 from.  
 òno, tone.  
 ornáre, to return, go back, come  
 back; *tornársene*, to come  
 home.  
 órre, *f.*, tower.  
 órto, wrong; *avér* —, to be wrong.  
 ótále, total.  
 ra, between, through.  
 ranquillaménte, calmly.  
 árre, to draw, bring, take.  
 rascináre, to drag.  
 rattáre, to treat.  
 remáre, to tremble.  
 rêno, train.  
 rionfále, triumphal.

triónfo, triumph.  
 trísté, sad.  
 trôppo, too, too much, very; *pur*  
 —, unfortunately.  
 trováre, to find.  
 tumúlto, tumult.  
 tútto, all, everything; — *il*, the  
 whole; *tútti e dúe*, both.

## U

ubbidíre, to obey.  
 uccéllo, bird.  
 udíre, to hear.  
 último, last, latest.  
 umáno, human, of man, kindly.  
 úmido, wet.  
 uníre, to unite.  
 unità, unity, union.  
 università, university.  
 úno, one, some, someone; *l'* —  
 e *l' áltro*, both.  
 uômo, man.  
 úscio, doorway, door.  
 uscíre, to go out; — *dí*, to leave.  
 útile, useful, good.

## V

vacánza, vacation.  
 vácca, cow.  
 vagóne, *m.*, car.  
 valére, to be worth; *far* —, to  
 prove.  
 valígia, valise, bag.  
 valláta, valley.  
 van, *3rd pl. pres. ind. of andáre*.  
 vaticáno, Vatican.  
 vécchia, old woman.  
 vécchio, old; *n.*, old man.  
 vedére, to see; *far* —, to show.  
 vëndere, to sell.  
 venerdì, Friday.



Venèzia, Venice.

veníre, to come, be; — in mén-te, to occur.

ventína: úna — di, twenty or so.

vênto, wind.

vérde, green.

vermíglío, vermilion, red.

véro, true; non è — ?, a request for assent, to be translated, according to the context, as am I not?, was he not? etc.

vêrso, toward.

vessílo, banner.

vestíto, dress.

vi, there, to it, in it.

vía, way, street; adv., away.

viággio, journey.

viavái, m., coming and going, surging.

viên, 3rd sing. pres. ind. of veníre.

vílla, villa.

villággio, village.

víncere, to win, vanquish, conquer, overcome; dársi per vínto, to give in.

víno, wine.

vínto, pp. of víncere.

virtù, f., virtue.

visíno, little face.

vísita, visit.

visitáre, to visit.

víso, face.

vís-ta, sight, view.

víta, life.

vívère, to live.

vívo, alive, keen; tenér —, keep up.

vízio, vice.

vóce, f., voice.

volére, to will, be willing, wish.

want, like, intend, decide, grant.

think; — díre, to mean;

vuòle, it takes; còsa vuòle

never mind.

vólta, time; úna —, once, one

upon a time; un' áltra —

again.

volúme, m., volume.

vóto, vote.

## Z

zío, uncle.

zítto, silent.

# ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

This vocabulary contains all English words appearing in exercise sections involving translation into Italian, except articles, cardinal and ordinal numerals, and possessive and personal pronouns.

Italian nouns ending in o are masculine and those ending in a are feminine, unless indication to the contrary is given.

Irregular Italian verbs are marked with a star.

## A

able: be —, potére.\*

about, (= *approximately*) circa;

(= *around*) intórno a; — it, ne;

be — to, stáre \* per.

according to, secóndo.

ache, dolére.\*

affection, affétto.

afraid: be —, temére.

after, dópo; day — tomorrow,

domán l' áltro.

again, ancóra.

against, cóntro; (*before a disjunctive pronoun*) cóntro di.

agent, fattóre, *m*.

agreeable, simpático.

all, tútto; not . . . at —, non . . .

púnto.

allude, allúdere.\*

almost, quási.

alone, sólo.

already, già.

although, benchè.

always, sèmpre.

among, fra.

amuse, divertíre.

ancient, antíco.

and, e; go —, andáre \* a.

another, un áltro.

answer, rispóndere.\*

any, *adj.*, alcúno; not . . . —,

non . . . nessúno; *pron.*, ne.

anything, quálche còsa; not . . .

—, non . . . niénte.

applaud, applaudíre.

apple, méla.

April, apríle, *m*.

arrival, arrívo.

arrive, arriváre.

as, cóme, tánto, quánto: *see* 32;

as soon as, súbito che; as far

as, fíno a.

ascend, salíre.\*

ashamed: be —, vergognársi.

ask, (*lesson 15*) domandáre; (*les-*

*son 32 and later lessons*) chiè-

dere \*; — for, chièdere.\*

at, a; at last, finalménte; at least,

alméno; at once, súbito; at

his house, da lúi; not . . . at

all, non . . . púnto; look at,

guardáre.

aunt, zía.

automobile, automóbile, *m*.

autumn, autúnno.

away, vía; go —, andársene.\*

## B

back, diétro; come *or* go —, tornáre; give —, restituíre.

bad, cattívo.

bag, valígia.

basket, panière, *m.*

be, éssere \*; (*of health*) stáre \*;

I am to, dêvo.\* *Other idioms with be are registered only under the other words concerned.*

beat, báttère.

beautiful, bello.

because, perchè.

before, *adv.*, prima; *conj.*, prima che; *prep.*, (*of time*) prima di; (*of place*) davánti.

beg, pregáre.

begin, cominciáre.

behind, diétro; (*before a disjunctive pronoun*) diétro a.

believe, crédere.

beside, accánto a.

best, *adj.*, miglióre; *adv.*, mèglio.

betray, tradíre.

better, *adj.*, miglióre; *adv.*, mèglio.

between, tra.

big, gránde.

bind, stríngere.\*

black, néro.

book, líbro.

born: be —, nascere.\*

both, tútti e dúe.

bow, inchíno.

boy, ragázzo.

brave, coraggióso.

bread, páne, *m.*

break, rómpere.\*

brick, mattóne, *m.*

bring, portáre.

broad, lárgo.

brother, fratéllo.

build, costruíre.\*

business, affáre, *m.*

but, ma; (= *only*) non . . . ch

button, bottóne, *m.*

buy, compráre.

by, da; (*in special cases*) di, per

## C

call, chiamáre.

can: I —, pòsso.\*

care, cúra; take —, badáre.

carry, portáre.

cent, sóldo.

centre, cèntro.

century, sècolo; *see* 39 (*c*).

certain, cèrto.

cheek, guáncia.

child, fanciúlló.

choose, scégliere.\*

church, chièsa.

city, città.

close, chiúdere.\*

cloud, núvola.

coat, ábito.

coffee, caffè, *m.*

cold, fréddo.

color, colóre, *m.*

come, veníre\*; — back, tornáre

— in, entráre.

comfort, confortáre.

company, compagnía.

compel, costringere.\*

conduct, condúrre.\*

conquer, víncere.\*

consist, constáre.\*

content, contènto.

continue, continuáre.

convince, convíncere.\*

cook, cuócere.\*

corner, cánto.

cost, costáre.  
 count, cónte, *m*.  
 country, paése, *m*.  
 courage, corággio.  
 cousin, cugíno.  
 cover, copríre.\*  
 crowd, affolláre.  
 crude, crúdo.  
 cry, piángere.\*  
 custom, costúme, *m*.  
 cut, tagliáre.

## D

dark, scúro; (*lessons 25 and 33*)  
 búio.  
 day, giòrno; — after tomorrow,  
 domán l' áltro.  
 decide, decidere.\*  
 depart, partíre.  
 desire, *n.*, desidêrio.  
 desire, *vb.*, desideráre.  
 desk, scrivania.  
 die, moríre.\*  
 difficult, diffícile.  
 difficulty, difficoltà.  
 dinner, pránzo.  
 disappear, sparíre.\*  
 ditch, fòssa.  
 divide, dividere.\*  
 do, fáre.\* *For do as auxiliary,*  
*see 54 (g).*  
 doge, dóge, *m*.  
 door, pórtá.  
 doubt, dúbbio.  
 down, giù; sit —, sedére.\*  
 drag, trárre.\*  
 draw, trárre.\*  
 dress, vestíto.  
 drink, bére.\*  
 duke, dúca, *m*.

## E

each, *adj.*, ógni; *pron.*, ognúno;  
 — other: *see 47, 2 and 51 (f).*  
 early, prèsto.  
 earn, guadagnáre.  
 easy, fácilé.  
 eat, mangiáre.  
 egg, uòvo.  
 either, o.  
 Emmanuel, Emanuèle, *m*.  
 employee, impiegáto.  
 end, finíre.  
 enemy, nemíco.  
 English, inglése.  
 enjoy, godére.  
 enough, abbastánza; be —, ba-  
 stáre.  
 enter, entráre.  
 entreaty, preghiéra.  
 escape, scappáre.  
 Europe, Európa.  
 even, ancóra; not . . . —, non  
 . . . nemméno.  
 evening, séra; this —, staséra.  
 ever, sèmpre.  
 every, ógni.  
 everything, tútto.  
 examination, csáme, *m*.  
 exclamation, esclamazióne, *f*.  
 exist, esístere.\*  
 explain, spiegáre.  
 express, csprímere.\*  
 extinguish, spègnere.\*  
 eye, ócchio.

## F

face, fáccia.  
 fall, cadére.\*  
 far, lontáno; as — as, fíno a.  
 father, pádre, *m*.

fatherland, pátria.

fault, cólpa.

favor, favóre, *m.*

fear, temére.

feel, sentíre.

few, a —, pòchi.

fight, combáttere.

finally, finalménte.

find, trováre.

fine, bello.

finger, díto.

finish, finíre.

first, *adv.*, prima.

flee, fuggíre.

Florence, Firénze, *f.*

flower, fióre, *m.*

follow, seguíre.\*

foot, piède, *m.*

for, per; — two years, dúe ánni,

da dúe ánni: *see* 79 (*e*); ask —,  
chièdere\*; look —, cercáre;

wait —, aspettáre.

foreigner, forestiére, *m.*

France, Fráncia.

French, francése.

friend, amíco.

from, da; (*in special cases*) di.

fry, fríggere.\*

full, pièno.

## G

gallery, gallería.

garden, giardíno.

gather, cógliere.\*

gentleman, signóre, *m.*

get, ricévere.

girl, ragázza.

give, dáre\*; — back, restituíre.

glasses, occhiáli, *m. pl.*

glove, guánto.

go, andáre\*; go away, andár-

sene\*; go back, tornáre; g

in, entráre; go out, uscíre\*

go up, salíre.\*

good, buòno.

goods, stóffa.

government, govérno.

gratitude, gratitúdine, *f.*

great, gránde.

greet, salutáre.

grieve, dolére.\*

ground, tèrra.

grow, créscere.\*

guarantee, garantíre.

guard, guárdia.

## H

habit, abitúdine, *f.*

half, *n.*, metà; *adj.*, mèzzo; —

past two, le dúe e mèzzo.

hand, máno, *f.*; right —, dèstra.

handkerchief, fazzolétto.

handsome, bello.

happen, succèdere.\*

happy, felice.

hard, *adv.*, fórte.

harm, nuócere.\*

hat, cappéllo.

have, avére\*; (*causative*) fáre\*

(*expressing obligation*) dovére.\*

*For have as auxiliary, see* 54, 3

head, tèsta.

health, salúte, *f.*

hear, sentíre; (*lesson* 38) udíre.\*

help, aiutáre; not to be able to —

non potére\* a méno di non.

here, qui, ci: *see* 84; — is, ècco

hide, nascóndere.\*

high, álto.

hill, cólle, *m.*

hold, tenére.\*

home, cása.



honor, onóre, *m.*  
 hope, speráre.  
 hotel, albérgo.  
 hour, óra.  
 house, cása; at his —, da lui.  
 how, cóme; — much, quánto.

## I

idea, idéa.  
 if, se.  
 impossible, impossibile.  
 in, in; (*with the name of a city*)  
   a; (— *within*) fra; (*in special*  
*cases*) di; come or go in, en-  
 tráre; in order that, perchè;  
 in this way, così.

industrious, industrioso.  
 instead, invéce.  
 interesting, interessánte.  
 into, in; (*in special cases*) a.  
 invade, invádere.\*  
 Italian, italiáno.  
 Italy, Itália.

## J

John, Giovánni, *m.*  
 June, giúgno.

## K

keep, tenére\*; — still, tacére.\*  
 key, chiáve, *f.*  
 kill, uccídere.\*  
 king, re, *m.*  
 knock, picchiáre.  
 know, sapére\*; (— *be acquainted*  
*with*) conóscere.\*

## L

lady, signóra.  
 lake, lágo.  
 large, gránde.

last, último; at —, finalménte;  
 — night, stanótte; — year,  
 l' ánnò scórso.

late, in ritárdo.  
 latest, último.  
 laugh, rídere.\*  
 lawyer, avvocató.  
 lead, menáre.  
 leaf, fógliá.  
 least: at —, alméno.  
 leave, (*intransitive*) partíre; (*tran-*  
*sitive*) lasciáre.  
 lend, prestáre.  
 lesson, lezióne, *f.*  
 let, lasciáre. *For let as auxiliary,*  
*see the note on p. 115.*

letter, lèttèra.  
 library, bibliotéca.  
 lie, giacére.\*  
 life, víta.  
 light, *n.*, lúme, *m.*  
 light, *vb.*, accéndere.\*  
 like, *prep.*, cóme; — a man, da  
 uómo.  
 like, *vb.*, (*with an infinitive*)  
 volére\*; I like it, mi piáce.\*

line, línea.  
 little, píccolo; a — (— *some*), un  
 po' di; (— *somewhat*), un po'.  
 live, vívcre.\*  
 long, lúngo.  
 look, — at, guardáre; — for,  
 cercáre.  
 lose, pérdere.  
 love, amáre.  
 low, profóndo.  
 lunch, colazióne, *f.*

## M

make, fáre.\*  
 man, uómo; young —, giòvane, *m.*

manner, *maniera*.  
 market, *mercato*.  
 Mary, *María*.  
 may: I —, *pòsso*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 Milan, *Milano, f.*  
 mile, *miglio*.  
 minute, *minúto*; ten minutes past two, *le dúe e dièci*; ten minutes of two, *le dúe méno dièci*.  
 mistaken: be —, *sbagliarsi*.  
 moment, *momento*.  
 monarch, *monarca, m.*  
 Monday, *lunedì*.  
 money, *denáro*.  
 month, *mése, m.*  
 more, *più*.  
 morning, *mattina*; this —, *stanóte*.  
 most, *più*.  
 mother, *mádre, f.*  
 mountain, *montagna*.  
 move, *muóvere*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 Mr., *signór*.  
 much, *mólto*; how —, *quánto*; so —, *tánto*; too —, *tróppo*; very —, *mólto*.  
 must: I —, *dévo*.<sup>\*</sup>

## N

name, *nóme, m.*  
 Naples, *Nápoli, f.*  
 near, *vicíno a*.  
 necessary, *necessário*; be —, *bisognáre*.  
 never, *mái*.  
 new, *nuóvo*.  
 newspaper, *giornále, m.*  
 night, *nótte, f.*; last —, *stanótte*.  
 no, no; — one, *nessúno*.  
 noon, *mézzogiórno*.

not, *non*.  
 novel, *románzo*.  
 now, *óra*.

## O

obliged: be —, *dovére*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 o'clock: two —, *le dúe*.  
 of, *di*; of it, of him, of them, *ne*.  
 ten minutes of two, *le dúe méno dièci*.  
 off, *vía*; take —, *leváre*.  
 offer, *offrirc*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 often, *spéssu*.  
 old, *vècchio*.  
 on, *su*; (*in special cases*) *con*.  
 once, *úna vólta*; at —, *súbito*.  
 one, *úno*; (*as indefinite subject*) *si*; no —, *nessúno*; other — *áltro*; that —, the —, *quéllo*.  
 this —, *quésto*; — who, *chi*.  
 only, *adj.*, *sólo*; *adv.*, *soltánto*.  
 open, *adj.*, *apérto*.  
 open, *vb.*, *aprire*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 or, *o*; ten or so: *see 40*.  
 order, *n.*, *órdine, m.*; in — that *perchè*.  
 order, *vb.*, *comandáre*.  
 other, — one, *áltro*; each —: *see 47, 2 and 51 (f)*.  
 ought: I —, *dovréi*.  
 out, *fuòri*; go —, *uscíre* <sup>\*</sup>; put — *spègnere*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 outside, *di fuòri*.  
 owe, *dovére*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 own, *próprio*.

## P

pain, *dolére*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 pair, *páio*.

paper, cárta.  
 pardon, perdonáre.  
 parlor, salòtto.  
 past, passáto; half — two, le due  
 e mézzo.

patience, paziènza.  
 pay, pagáre.  
 peasant, contadíno.  
 pen, pénna.  
 pencil, matíta.  
 perfectly, perféttaménte.  
 perhaps, fórse.  
 person, persóna.  
 persuade, persuadére.\*  
 photograph, fotografia.  
 picture, quádرو.  
 place, *n.*, pósto.  
 place, *vb.*, pórrre.\*  
 please, piacére.\*  
 pleasure, piacére, *m.*  
 pocket, tásca.  
 poem, poesía.  
 polite, gentíle.  
 poor, pòvero.  
 pope, pápa, *m.*  
 porter, facchíno.  
 praise, lodáre.  
 prefer, preferíre.  
 present, presentáre.  
 press, prémere.  
 pretty, bello.  
 prisoner, prigioníero.  
 probably, probabílménte.  
 promise, prométtere.\*  
 protect, protèggere.\*  
 provided, purchè.  
 public, púbblico.  
 push, spíngere.\*  
 put, (*lessons 28 and 30*) mèttere\*;  
 (*lessons 32 and 34*) pórrre\* —  
 out, spégnere.\*

## Q

queen, regína.  
 quick, súbito.

## R

rain, piòvere.\*  
 read, lèggere.\*  
 ready, prònto.  
 really, veraménte.  
 recall, ricordáre.  
 receive, ricévere.  
 recognize, conóscere.\*  
 red, rósso.  
 remain, rimanére.\*  
 Renaissance, Rinasciménto.  
 repeat, ripètere.  
 respect, rispettáre.  
 return, tornáre.  
 right, dirítto; — hand, dèstra; be  
 —, avér\* ragióne.  
 rise, sórgere.\*  
 river, fúme, *m.*  
 Rome, Róma.  
 room, stánza.  
 rose, ròsa.  
 round, rotóndo.  
 run, córrere.\*  
 Russia, Rússia.

## S

sacristan, sagrestáno.  
 say, díre.\*  
 scene, scéna.  
 school, scuòla.  
 search, cercáre.  
 seated, sedúto.\*  
 see, vedére.\*  
 seek, cercáre.  
 seem, parére.\*

self, stéssu.  
 send, mandáre.  
 sentence, fráse, *f*.  
 September, settémbre, *m*.  
 servant, servitóre, *m*.  
 serve, servíre.  
 several, parécchi.  
 sew, cucíre.\*  
 shake, scuòtere.\*  
 shoe, scárpa.  
 shop, bottéga.  
 short, córto.  
 shoulder, spálla.  
 show, mostráre.  
 shut, chiúdere.\*  
 sick, maláto.  
 sight, vísta.  
 silent, silenzióso; be —, tacére.\*  
 since, (*causal*) poichè; (*temporal*)  
     dacchè.  
 sincere, sincéro.  
 sing, cantáre.  
 sir, signóre, *m*.  
 sister, sorélla.  
 sit, — down, sedére.\*  
 site, síto.  
 sleep, dormíre.  
 small, píccolo.  
 smile, sorrídere.\*  
 smoke, fúmo.  
 snow, *n.*, néve, *f*.  
 snow, *vb.*, nevicáre.  
 so, così; so much, tánto; I think  
     so, lo crédo; ten or so: *see* 40.  
 some, alcúno, quálche, *ne*: *see* 89.  
 someone, qualcúno.  
 something, quálche còsa.  
 song, cánto.  
 sonnet, sonétto.  
 soon, prèsto; as — as, súbito che.  
 speak, parláre.

spend, (*of money*) spèndere\*  
     (*of time*) passáre.  
 square, piázza.  
 stand, stáre.\*  
 start, partíre.  
 station, stazióne, *f*.  
 stay, (*lesson 15*) restáre; (*lesson 2*  
     *and later lessons*) rimanére.\*  
 still, *adj.*, quièto; keep —, tacére.  
 still, *adv.*, ancóra.  
 stocking, cálza.  
 street, vía.  
 student, studénte, *m*.  
 study, *n.*, stúdio.  
 study, *vb.*, studiáre.  
 such a, un tále.  
 suffer, soffríre.\*  
 summer, estáte, *f*.  
 sun, sóle, *m*.  
 Sunday, doménica.  
 sure, sicúro.  
 surprise, *n.*, sorprésa.  
 surprise, *vb.*, sorprèndere\*; b  
     surprised, meravigliársi.  
 surrender, rèndersi.\*  
 surround, cingere.\*  
 swear, giuráre.  
 sword, spáda.  
 syllable, síllaba.

## T

table, távola.  
 take, prèndere\*; (= *take away*)  
     tógliere\*; (= *accompany, lead*)  
     menáre; — care, badáre; —  
     off, leváre; it takes, ci vuóle.\*  
 talk, parláre.  
 tall, álto.  
 telephone, telefonáre.  
 tell, (*lessons 13-17*) raccontáre  
     (*lessons 35-40*) díre.\*

than, che, di: *see* 33.

thank, ringraziare.

that, *conj.*, che; in order —, perchè.

that, *pron.*, quello, ciò, che: *see* 42 and 44; — one, quello.

theatre, teatro.

then, poi.

there, là, vi, ci: *see* 84; — is: *see note on p. 109.*

thing, cosa.

think, (= meditare) pensare; (= suppose) credere.

this, questo; — one, questo; in — way, così; — morning, stamane; — evening, stasera.

though, però.

thousand, migliaio.

through, per.

ticket, biglietto.

time, tempo, volta: *see note on p. 111.*

to, a; (*before the name of a country*) in; (*in special cases*) da, di, per; according to, secondo; be about to, stare \* per. *For to before an infinitive, see 79 (b); for to with an unemphatic personal pronoun, see 47-50.*

today, oggi.

tomorrow, domani; day after —, domán l' altro.

too, — much, troppo; he —, anche lui.

toward, verso.

tower, torre, *f.*

train, treno.

travel, viaggiare.

tree, albero.

true, vero.

trunk, baúle, *m.*

try, cercare.

turn, (*intransitive*) volgersi\*; (*transitive*) volgere.\*

## U

umbrella, ombrello.

under, sotto.

understand, capire.

until, *conj.*, finchè non; *prep.* fino a.

up, su; up to, fino a; go up, salire.\*

## V

vase, vaso.

Venice, Venezia.

very, — much, molto.

Victor, Vittorio.

view, vista.

villa, villa.

village, villaggio.

visit, visitare.

vote, votare.

## W

wait, — for, aspettare.

wake, svegliare.

walk, camminare.

wall, muro.

want, volere.\*

warm, caldo.

waste, sprecare.

watch, guardare.

water, acqua.

way, via; in this —, così.

weather, tempo.

week, settimana.

weep, piangere.\*

well, bene.

what, *interj.*, come.



what, *pron.*, *quello* che, che, che  
*côsa*: see 42-44.  
 when, *quando*.  
 where, *dôve*.  
 wherever, *dovunque*.  
 which, che, *quale*: see 43 and 44.  
 while, *mentre*.  
 white, *bianco*.  
 who, *chi*, che: see 43 and 44; one  
 —, *chi*; whom, *cui*.  
 whole, *intero*; the —, *tutto il*.  
 whose, *di chi*.  
 why, *perchè*.  
 wife, *moglie, f.*  
 willing: be —, *volere*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 wind, *vento*.  
 window, *finestra*.  
 winter, *inverno*.  
 wish, *volere*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 with, *con*.  
 without, *senza*; (*before a disjunctive pronoun*) *senza di*.  
 woman, *donna*.

wont: be —, *solere*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 wood, *bosco*.  
 word, *parola*.  
 work, *n.*, *lavoro*; (*literary work*,  
*ôpera*.  
 work, *v.*, *lavorare*.  
 worse, *peggio*.  
 worth: be —, *valere*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 worthy, *digno*.  
 write, *scrivere*.<sup>\*</sup>  
 writer, *scrittore, m.*  
 wrong: be —, *avér* <sup>\*</sup> *torto*.

## Y

year, *anno*.  
 yellow, *giallo*.  
 yes, *sì*.  
 yesterday, *ieri*.  
 yet, *ancora*; (= *nevertheless*) *ep*  
*pure*.  
 yield, *cedere*.  
 young, *giovane*.

# INDEX

[The numbers refer to paragraphs. *Ad. N.* means the Additional Notes on Pronunciation printed on pp. 6-10.]

- a** (letter): 2; *Ad. N.*, 2.  
**a** (preposition): 79; 79, *b, h*.  
**Accent**: 7; *Ad. N.* (pp. 9, 10); 47;  
 48; 84; 92, *c*.  
**Accents**: 3; 7.  
**Address** (forms of): 52.  
**Adjectives**: 26-34.  
     **Comparison**: 31-34; **gender**:  
     26; 28; **number**: 26; 29;  
     **position**: 27; **used as nouns**:  
     20; 30.  
**Adverbs**: 80-85.  
     **ci, vi**: 47, *a*; 84; **comparison**:  
     80, 2; **manner**: 85; **ne**: 47,  
     3, *a*; 56, *b*; 'never': 83;  
     'not,' **non**: 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*;  
     'only': 82; **position**: 80, 1;  
     'so': 85, *a*.  
 'All': 87.  
**Alphabet**: 1; *Ad. N.*, 1.  
**altrui**: 91, *d*.  
 'Any': 88.  
**Articles**: 9-16.  
**Augmentatives**: 35-37.  
**Auxiliary verbs**: 53-57.  
     **avere**: 53, *b*; 54, 3; **essere**: 53,  
     *a*; 54, 1, 3; **compound**  
     **tenses**: 54; 56; **modal aux-**  
     **iliaries**: 57.  
**avere**: 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b*; 92, 5.  
 'Be': 53, *a*; 54, 1, 3; 54, *a, c, d, f*;  
     92, 126.  
**bello**: 29, *c*.  
 'Both': 38, 4; 91.  
**buono**: 29, *c*.  
 'Can': see **Modal Auxiliaries**.  
**ci** (**adv.**): 47, *a*; 84.  
**ci** (**pron.**): 47-50.  
**Close Vowels**: 3; *Ad. N.*, 3.  
**Comparison**: 31-34; 80, 2.  
     **Adjectives**: 31-34; **adverbs**:  
     80, 2; **irregular**: 31, *a*;  
     80, 2.  
**Compound Tenses**: 54; 56; 73; 75.  
**Conditional**: see **Past Future**.  
**Conjugation**: 53-68; 92.  
     **First**: 59; **second**: 60; **third**:  
     60; **fourth**: 61; **variations**:  
     63; 66, *a*; 68; **irregular**  
     **verbs**: 64-68; 92; **auxiliary**  
     **verbs**: 53-57; **compound**  
     **tenses**: 54; 56; **compound**  
     **verbs**: 67, *a*; 93, *a*.  
**Conjunctions**: 78.  
     **With subjunctive**: 77, *d*; 78,  
     *a, b*.  
**Consonants**: 4-6; *Ad. N.*, 4-6.  
**Contraction**: 12; 23 (?); 50 (?);  
     63, *d*; 65; 66, 1; 68, *a*.

- da:** 79, *c, f, g*.  
**Dates:** 38, *b*; 39, *b, c*.  
**Definite Article:** 10-13.  
     Form: 10-12; use: 12, *a*; 13;  
         38, *b*; 39, *a*; 45; 69; 70.  
**di:** 12; 17; 79, *b, 3, f, h, j*.  
**Diminutives:** 35-37.  
**'Do':** 54, *g*.  
**Double Letters:** 6.  
**Doubling:** Ad. N., 6; 48, *d*; 93, *a*.  
  
**e (letter):** 3; Ad. N., 3; 68, *i, j*.  
**e (conjunction):** 78; 78, *c*.  
**ecco:** 48, *e*; 84, *a*.  
**essere:** 53, *a*; 54, *1, 3*; 54, *a, c, d*;  
     92, 126.  
**Exclamations:** Ad. N (p. 10); 43,  
     *b*; 79, *b*.  
  
**'For':** 79, *e*.  
**Fractions:** 39, *d*.  
**Future:** 54, 2; 68, *c*; 74; 77.  
     Contracted: 65; 66, *1*.  
  
**Gender:** 9-11; 14-15; 18-21; 26;  
     28.  
**grande:** 29, *c*.  
  
**h:** 4; 22, *a*; 23, *a, c*; 59, *a*.  
**'Have':** 53, *b*; 54, 3; 54, *b, h*; 57,  
     *a*; 92, 5.  
**'Here':** 84.  
  
**i (letter):** 2; 2, *a*; 4; Ad. N., 2; 22,  
     *b*; 23, *b*; 59, *a*; 60; 92, *f*.  
**i (euphonic):** 79; 81.  
**Imperative:** 66, *b*; 72; 77, *a*.  
**Imperfect:** see Past Descriptive.  
**Impersonal Verbs:** 51; 51, *h*; 77, *c*.  
**Indefinite Article:** 14-16.  
     Form: 14-15; use: 16; 38, *1*;  
         43, *b*.  
  
**Infinitive:** 48, *b*; 58; 69-72.  
     Contracted: 65.  
**Inflections of the Voice:** see p. 9.  
**Interrogation:** see Questions.  
**issimo (suffix):** 35, *a*.  
**'It':** 47; 51; 51, *h*.  
  
**Letters:** 1; Ad. N., 1.  
  
**'May':** see Modal Auxiliaries.  
**Modal Auxiliaries:** 57.  
**Moods:** 57; 69-77; 78, *a*.  
     Conditional: see Past Future.  
     Imperative: 66, *b*; 72; 77, *c*;  
         infinitive: 48, *b*; 58; 65; 69;  
         72; participle: 54, *a, b*; 62;  
         63, *d*; 69-71; subjunctive  
         44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.  
**'Must':** see Modal Auxiliaries.  
**'Myself,' 'thymself,' etc.:** 47, 2  
     51, *e*.  
  
**ne (adv.):** 47, *a*; 56, *b*; 84.  
**ne (pron.):** 47, 3; 48; 49; 88; 89.  
**Neuter Verbs:** 54, 3; 56, *a*.  
**'Never':** 83.  
**non:** 80, 1; 81; 91, *a*.  
**'Not':** 80, 1; 81.  
**Nouns:** 17-25.  
     Gender: 18-21; number: 22  
         25.  
     Number: 9-11; 22-25; 29.  
     Numerals: 38-40.  
         Cardinal: 38; ordinal: 39.  
  
**o (letter):** 3; Ad. N., 3; 59, *b*.  
**o (conjunction):** 78; 78, *c*.  
**Old Forms:** Ad. N., 3, *f*; 12 (2)  
     23 (2); 44, *a*; 47 (1); 48, *d*;  
     50 (1); 63, *d*; 68; 92; 93.

- 'One' (indefinite): 55; 86.  
 'Only': 82.  
 Open Vowels: 3; Ad. N., 3.  
 'Ought': see Modal Auxiliaries.
- Participle: 54, *a*, *b*; 62; 63, *d*; 69-71.  
     Past: 54, *a*, *b*; 63, *d*; 71, *c*;  
     present: 62; 69-71.  
 Partitive: 12, *a*; 88; 89.  
 Passive: 54, *i*; 54, *f*; 55; 56, *c*.  
 Past Absolute: 60; 65; 66, 2, 3; 68, *d*, *e*; 75.  
 Past Descriptive:  
     Form: 63, 63, *c*; 65; 68, *a*, *h*;  
     use: 54, *d*, *e*; 73; 75.  
 Past Future: 54, 2; 68, *b*; 76; 77; 92, *c*.  
     Contracted: 65; 66, *i*; 92, *c*.  
 Past Perfect: see Perfect Tenses.  
 Perfect Tenses: 54, 3; 56; 73; 75.  
 Personal Pronouns: 46-52.  
     Conjunctive: 47-50; form: 47; 48, *c*, *d*; 50; 52, *i*; position: 48; 49.  
     Disjunctive: 51-52; omission: 51, 2; 51, *h*; use: 51; 51, *i*; 51, *a*, *b*, *h*.  
 Pitch: see p. 9.  
 Pluperfect: see Perfect Tenses.  
 Plural: 22-25; 29.  
     Irregular: 23, *d*; 25; words in -co and -go: 23, *c*.  
 Poetic Forms: see Old Forms.  
 Possessive: 17; 45; 52, *i*.  
 Prefixes: 93, *a*.  
 Prepositions: 79.  
     da: 79, *c*, *f*, *g*.  
     'to': 79, *a*, *b*.  
 Present: 65; 66, 4; 68, *f*, *g*; 73; 74.  
 Preterit: see Past Absolute.  
 Preterit Perfect: see Second Past Perfect.  
 Pronouns: 41-52; 86-91.  
     Demonstrative: 42; indefinite: 86-91; interrogative, 43; personal: see Personal; possessive: see Possessive; reciprocal: see Reciprocal; reflexive: see Reflexive; relative: 44.  
 Pronunciation: 1-8; Ad. N.
- qualche: 29, *b*; 89.  
 Quantity: 2; Ad. N., 2.  
 Questions: Ad. N. (p. 10); 43; 51, 2; 77, *f*, *g*; 79, *b*; 81, *a*.
- Reciprocal Pronouns and Verbs: 47, 2; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3; 51, *f*; 52, *i*; 56, *b*.  
 Reflexive Pronouns: 47, 2; 48; 49; 50; 51, 3; 52, *i*; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.  
 Reflexive Verbs: 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.
- santo: 29, *c*.  
 Second Past Perfect: 54, 3; 75.  
 'Shall': 54, 2; 57.  
 'Should': 54, 2; 57; 76; 77.  
 si: 47-50; 52; 55; 56, *b*; 63, *a*; 86.  
 'So': 85, *a*.  
 'Some': 89.  
 Spelling: 1-8.  
 Subjunctive: 44, *c*; 77; 78, *a*.  
 Suffixes: Ad. N., 3; 35-37; 85.  
 Syllables: 8.

## Tenses:

Compound: 54; 56; 73; 75.

Future: see Future; imperfect: see Past Descriptive; past absolute: see Past Absolute; past descriptive: see Past Descriptive; present: see Present; preterit: see Past Absolute.

'Than': 33.

'There': 84.

Time of day: 38, *c*.'To': 79, *a*, *b*.*u* (letter): 2; 2, *a*; 4; Ad. N., 2.

Verbs: 53-77; 92; 93.

Auxiliary verbs: see Auxiliary;  
conjugation: see Conjugation;

tion; lists of irregular verbs: 92; 93; alphabetical: 92; conjugations: 92; moods: see Moods; tenses: Tenses; regular verbs: 56; 59-63; irregular verbs: 64-68; 92; regular verbs: 66; compound verbs: 69, *a*; old forms: 68; 92.

*vi* (adv.): 47, *a*; 84.

Vowels: 2-3; Ad. N., 2-3.

'Whatever': 44, *c*.'Whoever': 44, *c*.

'Will': 54, 2; 57.

'Would': 54, 2; 54, *c*; 57; 76.

'You': 52; 86.









ISBN 978-1-40867-490-1



9 781408 674901